

SHAKESPEAR'S WORKS,
 forming part of
 Cooke's Pocket Edition of
 the Original & Complete Works of
 SELECT BRITISH POETS.
 or Entertaining Poetical Library
 containing the most Esteem'd
 Poetic Productions
 Superb



R. Grubb del.

Embellished under the direction of C. Cooke March 14. 1797.
 Quoted by his friend and fall asleep Vol. second pp. page 190.

W. H. 1797



12.

THE
POETICAL WORKS
OF
SHAKSPEARE.
WITH
THE LIFE OF THE AUTHOR.

Coake's Edition.

Pride of his own, and wonder of this age,
Who first created, and yet rules the stage,
Bold to design, all pow'rful to express,
Shakspeare each passion drew in ev'ry dress:
Great above rule, and imitating none,
Rich without borrowing, Nature was his own.

Mallet.

Oh, where's the bard, who at one view
Could look the whole creation through,
Who traversed all the human heart,
Without recourse to Grecian art?
He scorn'd the modes of imitation,
Of altering, pilfering, and translation,
Nor painted horror, grief, or rage,
From models of a former age;
The bright original he took,
And tore the leaf from nature's book.
'Tis Shakspeare, thus, who stands alone---

Lloyd.

EMBELLISHED WITH SUPERB ENGRAVINGS.

London:

Printed for C. COOKE, No. 17, Peterborough-Row,
and sold by all the Bookellers in
Great-Britain and
Ireland.



THE
POETICAL WORKS
OF
WILLIAM SHAKSPEARE.

CONTAINING HIS

VENUS AND ADONIS,
RAPE OF LUCRECE,
SONNETS,

PASSIONATE PILGRIM,
AND
A LOVER'S COMPLAINT.

In the first feat, in robe of various dyes,
A noble wildness flashing from his eyes,
Sat Shakspeare. In one hand a wand he bore,
For mighty wonders fam'd in days of yore;
The other held a globe, which to his will
Obedient turn'd, and own'd the master's skill:
Things of the noblest kind his genius drew,
And look'd through nature at a single view:
A loose he gave to his unbounded soul,
And taught new lands to rise, new seas to roll;
Call'd into being scenes unknown before,
And, passing nature's bounds, was something more.

Churchill.

London:
PRINTED AND EMBELLISHED
Under the Direction of
C. COÖKE.

7





Engraved by W. Baskett from a drawing by W. H. Brown taken from an Original Painting

SHAKESPEARE.

Engraved for C. Cooke April 10. 1797.

LIFE OF SHAKSPEARE.

THe immortal Shakspeare rose in the auspicious reign of Queen Elizabeth, an æra favourable to genius and learning, when liberty began to dawn, and dispel the mists of Gothic ignorance, and its puny nursling, Superstition.—Reason having now assumed its empire, over the human mind, the mantle of mystery, which had veiled both religion and literature, was removed; mankind began to exercise their intellectual powers, and assert their right to think for themselves.

At this juncture appeared the greatest genius that ever graced this or any other country. He appeared, as is very forcibly expressed by one of his biographers, “to silence the legendary tales of the bard and the minstrel, to regulate the wildness of romantic fiction, to put to flight the phantoms of allegory, and to advance original poetry almost to the summit of perfection.”

Dr. Johnson describes the appearance of this extraordinary genius at a period when mankind were struggling to emerge from barbarity with an energy of diction scarcely to be equalled in the whole compass of poetic composition. The lines alluded to are as follow:

“When learning’s triumph o’er her barbarous foes
“First rear’d the stage, immortal Shakspeare rose;
“Each scene of many-colour’d life he drew,
“Exhausted worlds, and then imagin’d new;
“Existence saw him spurn her bounded reign
“And panting Time toil’d after him in vain.
“His powerful strokes presiding truth impress’d,
“And unresisting passion storm’d the breast.”

Very few particulars respecting the life of this astonishing genius, who advanced the reputation of dramatic poetry so far beyond the attainments of his age, have descended to posterity. Though his extraordinary talents excited the wonder and admiration of the age in which he flourished, yet, as he moved within a contracted sphere, the occurrences of his life were neither various nor important. Rowe, who published an edition of his works, has collected what incidents of his life were known in his time, which,

with some additional anecdotes and observations of others of his learned commentators, will form the basis of these memoirs.

William Shakspeare was born at Stratford upon Avon, in the year 1564. His father lived in repute, and carried on a considerable woollen manufactory in that town, but being encumbered with a family of ten children, had not the means of giving our author a very liberal education. He was sent to the Free-School, where he acquired all the classical learning he possessed; but what proficiency he made at school, and to what degree of eminence he attained afterwards in literary pursuits, has been a subject of dispute, nor can it be precisely ascertained. It is admitted, however, that he was deprived of the opportunity of prosecuting his learning at school, as the narrow circumstances of his father reduced him to the necessity of calling him home at an early age to assist him in his ordinary employment, for the support of a young and numerous family.

He passed some years of his life in this kind of domestic obscurity, till a singular circumstance occurred that brought forth the first dawn of his genius. The practice of deer-stealing being very prevalent at that time, he was seduced by some profligate companions to join them as an accomplice in robbing the park of a neighbouring Baronet, Sir William Lucy, who prosecuted him with such rigour as compelled him to quit his native country. This gave birth to a ballad, written by him, in which the Baronet was lampooned with such severity, that in revenge for the conceived insult offered to his dignity, he redoubled his prosecution of the author, who was thereby reduced to the necessity of withdrawing precipitately from Stratford, and in order to evade apprehension, of taking shelter in London.

On his arrival in the metropolis, he had recourse, for the means of support, to an expedient as singular as the circumstance which brought him there. Hired coaches not being then in use, it was customary for

persons of superior rank, who lived at any considerable distance from the play-houses, to ride thither on horse-back, so that men were employed to hold the horses till the close of the performance.

Our author, then unconscious of a genius which afterwards soared above all competitors, condescended to take upon him that servile office, and acquired such a reputation for vigilance and punctuality, that, in a short time, a greater number of horses being committed to his care than he could manage himself, he hired boys under him, who retained the appellation of Shakspeare's boys, as long as the custom of riding on horse-back to the play-house continued.

From the situation in which he was placed, he attracted the notice of the comedians, who recommended him to the manager. He was at first only admitted to the humble station of what is termed *call boy*, or, in other words, prompter's attendant, whose business it is to warn the performers to be ready as often as the several scenes of the drama in which they are engaged require their appearance on the stage.

Having remained some time in this humble station, he at length became an actor : and we find his name inserted in the list with the other performers, as was the custom in those days, without specifying the particular part allotted to each ; so that we cannot ascertain the cast he filled in the drama. From the minutest investigation it only appears that the principal character he performed was the Ghost in his own tragedy of Hamlet. From this lowly beginning, to the astonishment of his contemporaries, and the admiration of posterity, he became, in process of time, if not the greatest actor of his day, the paragon of dramatic writers ; as he seemed to have had all nature within his grasp, and to have been a perfect master in the display of the human passions. It is supposed that there are no traces to be found of the gradations by which this extraordinary genius rose from a degree of mediocrity, to the very summit of excellence, in dramatic writing. As there

there is no accurate chronology of his writings, some have been induced, and indeed with reason, to suppose that a proper idea had not for a great length of time been formed of their superior merit. Till within the present century no attempt of the kind appears to have been made. Pope, to his honour, applied himself to researches for that purpose, and the highest date he was able to trace, after exploring with the utmost diligence, was *Romeo and Juliet* in 1597, when Shakspeare was thirty three years old. Mr. Malone, by a most assiduous investigation, has traced the appearance of that play back to 1595, and by some inferences, rendered it probable that Shakspeare commenced dramatic writer in 1591, when he was about twenty seven years of age.—All his plays, from the most authentic accounts that can be obtained, appear to have been performed either at the theatre in Southwark, or in Black-friars, in which is a place that still retains the name of Play-house Yard. Shakspeare had a property in both those theatres.

By the excellence of his dramatic-productions, he obtained the patronage of Queen Elizabeth, who honoured him with many distinguishing marks of favour, and commanded several of his plays to be acted at court. Her Majesty was so highly delighted with his admirable character of Falstaff, in the two parts of Henry the Fourth, that she commanded him to continue it for one play more, and to exhibit the doughty knight in the character of a lover. This is said to have been the occasion of his writing "The Merry Wives of Windsor." How well he executed the task imposed by the Queen, that admirable comedy fully displays. Upon this occasion it may not be improper to observe, that this part of Falstaff is said to have been written originally under the name of *Oldcastle*; but that, as some of the family were then living, her Majesty very candidly commanded the author to affix some other name to the part; upon which he adopted that of Falstaff. Shakspeare has incurred
censure

censure on that account, as it is certain, from history, that Sir John Falstaff, who was a knight of the garter, and a lieutenant general, was a name of distinguished merit in the wars in France in the reigns of Henry the fifth and sixth.*

Our author likewise, by his transcendent abilities, obtained singular marks of favour and friendship from the Earl of Southampton, famous in the history of that time, for his attachment to the unfortunate Earl of Essex.†

All who have mentioned Shakspeare, concur in speaking of him, as possessing not only "remarkable readiness of wit, but gentleness of manners: as he was an happy imitator of nature," say his fellow comedians, "so he was a most gentle expresser of it. His mind and hand went together." Ben Jonson, Dryden, and other contemporary writers, commended his admirable wit, and amiable manners, in the most exalted strain of panegyric; and it is mentioned, as highly redounding to his praise, that "unassuming himself, the honours he received were unsought, and accompanied with the rare felicity of being enjoyed without envy."

The period of life at which he retired from the stage, cannot be ascertained. His name appears in the list of the drama of Jonson's *Sejanus*, in 1603,

* It is observed by Mr. Rowe, that "amongst other extravagances which our author has given to his Sir John Falstaff, in the *Merry Wives of Windsor*, he has made him a deer-stealer, and that he might at the same time remember the Warwickshire baronet, his prosecutor, he has given him very near the same coat of arms, which Dugdale, in his *Antiquities of that Country*, has given to a family there. There are two coats in Dugdale, where three silver fishes are borne in the name of Lucy, son of Sir William Lucy, in which are quartered, in four several divisions, twelve little fishes, three in each division, probably *Lucas*. This very coat, indeed, seems alluded to in *Shallow's* giving the *dozen white Lucas*, and in *Slender's* saying he may *quarter*. This humorous piece of satire at his prosecutor, at least twenty years after the provocation given, must have been owing to an unforgiving rancour on the part of the baronet; and if this was really the case, it is just that the disgrace of such inveteracy should remain as a lasting reproach, and *Shallow* stand as a mark of ridicule to stigmatize his malice."

† It is asserted, upon the authority of Sir William Davenant, that the Earl of Southampton gave him at one time a thousand pounds, to make a purchase which he was extremely desirous of accomplishing.

This, considering the value of money at that time, was an instance of generosity hardly to be equalled, and as a token of gratitude, the bard dedicated to his noble patron, "the first heir of his invention."

and

and the same year King James I. granted him a licence, together with Burbage and others, to exercise the art (as then expressed) of playing comedies, tragedies, &c. At that time he was so deeply engaged in dramatic concerns, that it cannot be reasonably supposed he entertained any design of retiring: and it is farther to be observed, that his tragedy of *Macbeth* was not written till after the accession of James I. at which period the absurd doctrine of witches became so prevalent.

The latter part of his life, as appear from the most authentic accounts that can be obtained, he spent in ease and retirement at Stratford, the place of his nativity; having acquired, by his dramatic pursuits, as author, manager, and actor, a property of about 200l. a year.—That he became a private gentleman, at least three years before his death, is obvious from the following remarkable story, related by Mr. Rowe: “Shakspeare had a particular intimacy with a Mr. Combe, an old gentleman, noted thereabouts for his wealth and usury: it happened that in a pleasant conversation amongst their common friends, Mr. Combe told Shakspeare, in a laughing manner, that he fancied he intended to write his epitaph, if he happened to outlive him, since he could not know what must be said of him when he was dead, he desired it might be done immediately, upon which Shakspeare gave him the four following lines:

“Ten in the hundred lies here engrav’d,
 “’Tis a hundred to ten his soul is not sav’d;
 “If any man ask who lies in this tomb,
 “Oh! oh! quoth the devil, ’tis my John-a-Combe.”

But the sharpness of the satire is said to have stung the man so severely that he never forgave it.”

This John Combe is supposed to be the same who, by Dugdale, in his *Antiquities of Warwickshire*, is said to have died in 1614, and for whom, at the upper end of the choir of the Guild of the Holy Cross at Stratford, a fair monument is erected, having a statue therein

therein cut in alabaster and in a gown with this epitaph.

“ Here lieth interred the body of John Combe, Esq. who died the 10th of July 1614, who bequeathed several annual charities to the parish of Stratford, and an hundred pounds to be lent to fifteen poor tradesmen from three years to three years, changing the parties every third year, at the rate of fifty shillings per annum; the interest to be distributed to the alms poor there.”—The donation has all the air of a rich and sagacious usurer.

Shakespeare himself did not survive Mr. Combe long; for he died in 1616, on the 23d of April, his birth-day. He was interred on the north side of the chancel in the great church at Stratford, where a monument, decent enough for the time, is erected to him, and placed against the wall. He is represented under an arch, in a sitting posture, a cushion spread before him, with a pen in his right hand, and his left rested on a scroll of paper.

The Latin distich, which is placed under the cushion has been given us by Mr. Pope in this manner.

INGENIO *Pylum*, *genio* *Socratem*, *arte* *Maronem*,
Terra *tegit*, *populus* *mæret*, *Olympus* *habet*.

We cannot discern the difference betwixt *ingenio* and *genio*, in the first line, the terms having been ever considered entirely synonymous.

Dugdale, in his *Antiquities of Warwickshire*, has copied this distich with a distinction which Mr. Rowe has followed, and which certainly restores us the true meaning of the epitaph.

Judicio *Pylum*, *genio* *Socratem*, &c.

The following lines are inscribed, under the Latin verses, on his monument.

“ Stay passenger, why dost thou go so fast?
“ Read, if thou canst, whom envious death hath plac’d
“ Within this monument. “ Shakspeare, with whom
“ Quick nature dy’d, whose name doth deck the tomb
“ Far more than cost; since all that he hath writ
“ Leaves living art, but page to serve his wit.”

Again,

Again, near the wall on which this monument is erected, is a plain free stone, under which his body is buried, with another epitaph, expressed in an uncouth jumble of small and capital letters.

“ Good friend for Iesus SAKE forbear
To digg T-E dust Encloased HERE
Else be T-E Man ^T spares TEs Stones,
And curst be he ^T moves my bones.

In 1741 a monument was raised to him in Westminster Abbey, among the worthies of his country. But he left behind him, in his works, a monument more durable than can be composed of perishable materials. The expression of the renowned bard of Rome may be with equal justice applied to the immortal bard of England.

“ *Exegi monumentum ære perennius.*”

His dramatic works were first collected and published together, by his fellow comedians, in 1623, seven years after his death; but they have since undergone a number of republications, by Rowe, Theobald, Hanmer, Warburton, Capel, Johnson, Steevens, Reed, and Malone. The several editors have displayed, in their comments and illustrations, much critical discernment and philological learning; and as a proof of the estimation in which they held the dramatic writings of this superior genius, they have investigated the most intricate passages in his works with a greater degree of pains and decision than were bestowed upon the illustration of any of the ancient classic writers either of Greece or of Rome*.

From the considerable interval between the period of Shakspeare's producing his dramatic works, and the appearance of any notes for illustrations of them, it may justly be inferred, that, at that time, the taste for stage exhibitions was not so prevalent as it became after the lapse of a century and a half. In confirma-

* The complete dramatic works of this incomparable genius will be included in our POCKET LIBRARY.

tion of this remark, it is observed, that Shakespeare, in the early part of life, acquired more reputation by his poems than his plays—indeed they are more frequently and more expressively alluded to by contemporary writers. Meres, in his *Wit's Treasury*, published in 1598, has the following observation. “As the soul of Euphorbus was thought to live in Pythagoras, so the sweet witty soul of Ovid lives in the mellifluous honey-tongued Shakespeare: witness his Venus and Adonis; his Lucrece; his sacred sonnets among his private friends.” In his dedication to the Earl of Southampton, he calls his poem of “Venus and Adonis,” as before observed, the first heir of his invention;” or, in other words, his first poetical production. It was printed in 1603, and so universally approved in his life-time, that, in the course of thirteen years from the first publication, it underwent six impressions.

Some are of opinion that the subject of Venus and Adonis was suggested to our author by Spenser's striking description of the hangings in the *Lady of Delight's Castle*, in the third book of the *Faery Queene*; or by a short poem, entitled, *The Shepherds Song of Venus and Adonis*, written by Henry Constable. He did not found the basis of his poem on the mythological story introduced in Spenser's *Faery Queene*, but rather followed the model of another poem, which represents Adonis as insensible to the charms and caresses of transcendent beauties.

His poem entitled *The Rape of Lucrece*, was published in 1594, the year after the first appearance of *Venus and Adonis*; and such was its estimation, that it went through four more editions, having been reprinted in 1598, 1600, 1607, and 1616. The Roman story, on which the Rape of Lucrece is founded, is detailed at large in the argument prefixed to the poem. Lucretia, the grand subject of it, was celebrated for conjugal fidelity throughout the Gothic ages: and as the legend is to be found amongst the writings of

Chaucer and other bards of antiquity, Mr. Wharton is of opinion, that the perusal of some of these works suggested to Shakspeare the plan of his poem.

These two poems were the only works Shakspeare published himself.—Their reputation in his day is evident, from the numerous impressions they underwent in the course of a short time. But the author, having adopted his composition to the taste of the times, when prolixity and circumlocution, even on trivial subjects, were not merely dispensed with, but approved; they are not read, perhaps, with the same pleasure in modern as in former days, being deemed too long, and therefore tedious. They evince great force of genius, and are acknowledged by the best critics to be superior to the productions of any contemporary authors in the line of what is called narrative poetry. The preference is given to *Venus* and *Adonis*. Fenton observes that “the passion of Venus for Adonis, is described, by our admirable Shakspeare, in language only inferior to the finest writers of antiquity.”

The Sonnets first appeared in 1609, and were republished in 1640.—They amount in the whole to the number of one hundred and fifty four. Many of them are written with perspicuity and energy; some are less forcible and expressive, and most of them want the charm of variety to recommend them.

The poem entitled *A Lover's Complaint*, first published in 1609, possesses great merit; the commencement is beautifully descriptive, and the piece in general bears a greater resemblance to the lighter productions of Spenser, in simplicity and pathos, than any of the works of contemporary writers, bearing analogy to the ancient ballad, described by himself in his comedy of *Twelfth Night*:

----- It is silly sooth,
And dallies with the innocence of youth,
Like the old age.

As the style and manner of writing has been progressively improving during the long series of time

which has elapsed from the days of Shakspeare to the present period, it would be highly illiberal and disingenuous to place his poems in a comparative view with the polished and refined productions of more modern bards.

The merit of his writings can only be estimated by their conformity to those rules which were prescribed, as the poet's guide, in his own age; and if his poetical works are brought to this standard, and in that view opposed to those either of preceding or contemporary writers, we hesitate not in concurrence with the opinion of the most impartial and competent judges, to confirm his title to a decided superiority, both with respect to comprehension of mind, and force of expression.

If we bring our author's narrative poetry into comparison with his dramatic, the transcendent excellence of the latter will be more conspicuous, and it will evidently appear, that though his abilities for the one may not have been of the most splendid kind, his genius for the other has far surpassed that with which any other mortal has been endowed; and we may venture to pronounce, that in the delineation of men and manners, the grand design of the drama, he stands unrivalled and alone.

The several editors of the works of our immortal bard, have descanted on his genius and writings, considered as a dramatic poet; but Pope and Dr. Johnson have chiefly distinguished themselves in that arduous, though pleasing task; we shall therefore present our readers with such extracts from their admirable compositions, as we presume will best conduce to the explanation and illustration of productions which in their line surpass all other efforts of human genius, displayed in this or any other country throughout the universe.

EXTRACTS FROM MR. POPE'S PREFACE.

“ If ever any author deserved the name of an *original*, it was Shakspeare. Homer himself drew not his art so immediately from the fountains of nature; it proceeded through Egyptians streams and channels, and came to him not without some tincture of the learning, or some cast of the models, of those before him. The poetry of Shakspeare was inspiration indeed: he is not so much an imitator, as an instrument of nature; and it is not so just to say, that he speaks from her, as that she speaks through him. His *characters* are so much nature herself, that it is a sort of injury to call them by so distant a name as copies from her. Those of other poets have a constant resemblance, which shews that they received them from one another, and were but multipliers of the same image: each picture, like a mock rainbow, is but the reflection of a reflection. But every single character in Shakspeare, is as much an individual as those in life itself; it is as impossible to find any two alike; and such as from their relation or affinity in any respect appear most to be twins, will, upon comparison, be found remarkably distinct. To this life and variety of characters we must add the wonderful preservation of it; which is such throughout his plays, that had all the speeches been printed without the very name of the persons, I believe one might have applied them with certainty to every speaker.

“ The power of an author over our passions was never possessed in a more eminent degree, or displayed in such different instances; yet all along there is seen no labour, no pains to raise them, no preparation to guide our guess to the effect, or be perceived to lead towards it; but the heart swells, and the tears burst out, just at the proper places; we are surprised the moment we weep; and yet, upon reflection, find the passion so just, that we should be surprised if we had not wept, and wept at that very moment. How astonishing is it again, that the passions directly opposite to those
of

laughter and spleen, are no less at his command; that he is not more a master of the *great* than of the *ridiculous* in human nature; of our noblest tenderesses, than of our vainest foibles; of our strongest emotions, than of our idlest sensations.

“ Nor does he only excel in the passions; in the coolness of reflection and reasoning he is full as admirable. His *sentiments* are not only in general the most pertinent and judicious upon every subject; but, by a talent very peculiar, something between penetration and felicity, he hits upon that particular point on which the bent of each argument turns, or the force of each motive depends. This is perfectly amazing from a man of no education or experience in those great and public scenes of life, which are usually the subjects of his thoughts; so that he seems to have known the world by intuition, to have looked through human nature at one glance, and to be the only author that gives ground for a very new opinion, that the philosopher, and even the man of the world, may be *born* as well as the poet.

“ It must be owned, that with all these great excellencies, he had some defects: It must be allowed that stage poetry, of all other, is more particularly levelled to please the populace, and its success more immediately depending upon the common suffrage. One cannot therefore wonder, if Shakspeare, having at first no other aim in his writings than to procure a subsistence, directed his endeavours solely to hit the taste and humour that then prevailed. The audience was generally composed of the meaner sort of people, and therefore the images of life were to be drawn from those of their own rank: accordingly we find that not only our author's, but all the old comedies, have their scenes amongst tradesmen and mechanics; and even their historical plays strictly follow the common old stories or vulgar traditions of that kind of people. In tragedy, nothing was so sure to surprise and cause admiration, as the most strange, unexpected, and con-

13 EXTRACTS FROM MR. POPE'S PREFACE.

frequently most unnatural events and incidents; the most exaggerated thoughts; the most verbose and bombast expression; the most pompous rhymes, and thundering versification. In comedy, nothing was so sure to please as mean buffoonery, vile ribaldry, and unmannerly jests of fools and clowns. Yet, even in these, our author's wit buoys up, and is borne above his subjects: his genius in those low parts is like some prince of a romance in the disguise of a shepherd or peasant; a certain greatness and spirit now and then break out, which manifest his higher extraction and qualities. It may be added, that not only the common audience had not any notion of the rules of writing, but few even of the better sort piqued themselves upon any great degree of knowledge or nicety that way, till Ben Jonson, getting possession of the stage, brought critical learning into vogue; and that this was not done without difficulty, may appear from those frequent lessons, (and indeed almost all declamations) which he was forced to prefix to his first plays, and put into the mouths of his actors, the *grex*, *chorus*, &c. and to remove the prejudices and inform the judgment of his hearers. Till then our authors had no thoughts of writing on the model of the ancients: their tragedies were only histories in dialogue; and their comedies followed the thread of any novel as they found it, no less implicitly than if it had been true history.

“ To judge, therefore, of Shakspeare by Aristotle's rules, is like trying a man by the laws of one country, who acted under those of another. He wrote to the *people*, and wrote at first without patronage from the better sort, and therefore without aims of pleasing them; without assistance or advice from the learned, as without the advantage of education or acquaintance among them; without that knowledge of the best models, the ancients, to inspire him with an emulation of them: in a word, without any views of reputation and of what poets are pleased to call immortality; some or all of which have encouraged the vanity, or animated the ambition of other writers. “ Another.

“ Another cause, no less strong than the former, may be deduced from our author's being a *player*, and forming himself first upon the judgments of that body of men whereof he was a member. They have ever had a standard to themselves, upon other principles than those of Aristotle. As they live by the majority, they know no rule but that of pleasing the present humour, and complying with the wit in fashion; a consideration which brings all their judgments to a short point. And in this view, it will be but fair to allow, that most of our author's faults are less to be ascribed to his wrong judgment as a poet, than to his right judgment as a player.

“ By the actors of his day it was thought a praise to Shakspeare that he scarce ever *blotted a line*. This they industriously propagated, as appears from what we are told by Ben Jonson, in his *Discoveries*, and from the preface of Heminge and Condell to the first folio edition. But, in reality, there never was a more groundless report, or to the contrary of which there are more undeniable evidences; as the comedy of the *Merry Wives of Windsor*, which he entirely re-wrote; *The History of Henry the Sixth*, which was first published under the title of *The Contention of York and Lancaster*; and that of *Henry the Fifth*, extremely improved. That of *Hamlet*, enlarged to almost as much again as at first, and many others. I believe the common opinion of his want of learning proceeded from no better ground.

“ With respect to our author's want of learning, it may be necessary to say something more. There is certainly a vast difference between *learning* and *languages*. How far he was ignorant of the latter, I cannot determine; but it is plain he had much reading, at least, if they will not call it learning. Nor is it any great matter, if a man has knowledge, whether he has it from one language or another. Nothing is more evident, than that he had a taste for natural philosophy,
mechanics

mechanics, ancient and modern history, poetical learning, and mythology. We find him very knowing in the customs, rules, and manners of antiquity. In *Coriolanus* and *Julius Cæsar*, not only the spirit but manners of the Romans are exactly known; and still a nicer distinction is drawn between the manners of the Romans in the time of the former and of the latter. His reading in the ancient historians is no less conspicuous, in many references to particular passages; and the speeches copied from Plutarch in *Coriolanus*, may, I think, as well be made an instance of his learning, as those copied from Cicero in the *Catiline* of Ben Jonson. The manners of other nations, in general, the Egyptians, Venetians, French, &c. are drawn with equal propriety. Whatever objects of nature, or branch of science, he either speaks of, or describes, it is always with competent, if not extensive knowledge; his descriptions are still exact; all his metaphors appropriated, and remarkably drawn from the true nature and inherent qualities of each subject: where he treats of ethics or politics, we may constantly observe a wonderful justness of distinction, as well as extent of comprehension. No one is more a master of the poetical story, or has more frequent allusions to the various parts of it. The modern Italian writers of novels he was manifestly acquainted with: and we may conclude him to be no less conversant with the ancients of his own country, from the use he has made of Chaucer in *Troilus* and *Cressida*.

“ I am inclined to think that the opinion of Shakspeare's want of learning proceeded originally from the zeal of the partizans of our author and Ben Jonson. It is ever the nature of parties to be in extremes; and nothing is so probable, as that, because Ben Jonson had much the more learning, it was said, on the one hand, that Shakspeare had none at all; and because Shakspeare borrowed nothing, it was said that Ben Jonson borrowed every thing. Because Ben Jonson did not write extempore, he was reproached with
being

EXTRACTS FROM DR. JOHNSON'S PREFACE. 21

being a year about every piece; and because Shakspeare wrote with ease and rapidity, they cried he never once made a blot. Nay, the spirit of opposition ran so high, that whatever those of the one side objected to the other, was taken at the rebound, and turned into praises, as injudiciously, as their antagonists before had made them objections.

“ I will conclude by saying of Shakspeare, that, with all his faults, and with all the irregularity of his drama, one may look upon his works, in comparison of those that are more finished and regular, as upon an ancient majestic piece of Gothic architecture, compared with a neat modern building: the latter is more elegant and glaring, but the former is more strong and more solemn. It must be allowed, that in one of these there are materials enough to make many of the other. It has much the greater variety, and much the nobler apartments; though we are conducted to them, by dark, odd, and uncouth passages. Nor does the whole fail to strike us with greater reverence, though many of the parts are childish, ill-placed, and unequal to its grandeur.”

EXTRACTS.

FROM DR. JOHNSON'S PREFACE.

“ The poet, of whose works I have undertaken the revision, may now begin to assume the dignity of an ancient, and claim the privilege of established fame, and prescriptive veneration. He has long outlived his century, the term commonly fixed as the test of literary merit. Whatever advantages he might once derive from personal allusions, local customs, or temporary opinions, have for many years been lost; and every topic of merriment, or motive of sorrow, which the modes of artificial life afforded him, now only obscure the scenes which they once illuminated. The effects of favour and competition are at an end; the tradition of his friendship and his enmities has perished; his works support no opinion with arguments, nor supply
any

22 EXTRACTS FROM DR. JOHNSON'S PREFACE.

any faction with innovations ; they can neither indulge vanity, nor gratify malignity ; but are read without any other reason than the desire of pleasure, and are therefore praised only as pleasure is obtained : yet, thus unassisted by interest or passion, they have passed through variations of taste, and change of manners, and as they devolved from one generation to another, have received new honours at every transmissiion. But, because human judgment, though it be gradually gaining upon certainty, never becomes infallible ; and approbation, though long continued, may yet be only the approbation of prejudice or fashion, it is proper to enquire, by what peculiarity of excellence Shakspeare has gained, and kept, the favour of his countrymen.

“ Shakspeare is, above all writers, at least above all modern writers, the poet of nature ; the poet that holds up to his readers, a faithful mirror of manners and of life. His characters are not modified by the customs of particular places, unpractised by the rest of the world ; by the peculiarities of studies or professions, which can operate but upon small numbers ; or by the accidents of transient fashions or temporary opinions ; they are the genuine progeny of common humanity, such as the world will always supply, and observation will always find. His persons act and speak by the influence of those general passions and principles by which all minds are agitated, and the whole system of life is continued in motion. In the writings of other poets, a character is too often an individual ; in those of Shakspeare, it is commonly a species.

“ It is from this wide extension of design, that so much instruction is derived. It is this which fills the plays of Shakspeare with practical axioms, and domestic wisdom. It was said of Euripides, that every verse was a precept ; and it may be said of Shakspeare, that from his works may be collected a system of civil and oeconomical prudence. Yet his real power is not shewn in the splendour of particular passages, but by the progress of his fable, and the tenour of his dialogue

logue and he that tries to recommend him by select quotations, will succeed like the pedant in Hierocles, who, when he offered his house to sale, carried a brick in his pocket as a specimen.

“ It will not easily be imagined how much Shakspeare excels in accommodating his sentiments to real life, but by comparing him with other authors. It was observed by the ancient schools of declamation, that the more diligently they were frequented, the more was the student disqualified for the world; because he found nothing there which he should ever meet in any other place. The same remark may be applied to every stage but that of Shakspeare. The theatre, when it is under any other direction, is peopled by such characters as were never seen, conversing in a language that was never heard, upon topics which will never arise in the commerce of mankind. But the dialogue of this author is often so evidently determined by the incident which produces it, and is pursued with so much ease and simplicity, that it seems scarcely to claim the merit of fiction, but to have been gleaned by diligent selection out of common conversation, and common occurrences.

“ This, therefore, is the praise of Shakspeare, that his drama is the mirror of life; that he who has mazed his imagination, in following the phantoms which other writers raise up before him, may here be cured of his delirious ecstasies, by reading human sentiments in human language, by scenes from which a hermit may estimate the transactions of the world, and a confessor predict the progress of the passions.

“ His adherence to general nature has exposed him to the censure of critics, who form their judgments upon narrow principles. Dennis and Rymer think his Romans not sufficiently Roman; and Voltaire censures his kings as not completely royal. Dennis is offended, that Menenius, a senator of Rome, should play the buffoon; and Voltaire perhaps thinks decency violated, when the Danish usurper is represented as a drunkard.

24. EXTRACTS FROM DR. JOHNSON'S PREFACE.

ard. But Shakspeare always makes nature predominant over accident, and if he preserves the essential character, is not very careful of distinctions, superinduced and adventitious. His story requires Romans, or kings, but he thinks only on men. He knew that Rome, like every other city, had men of all dispositions; and wanting a buffoon, he went into the senate-house for that which the senate-house would certainly have afforded him. He was inclined to shew an usurper and a murderer not only odious, but despicable; he therefore added drunkenness to his other qualities, knowing that kings love wine like other men, and that wine exerts its natural power upon kings. These are the petty cavils of petty minds; a poet overlooks the casual distinction of country and condition, as a painter, satisfied with the figure, neglects the drapery.

The censure which he has incurred by mixing comic and tragic scenes, as it extends to all his works, deserves more consideration. Let the facts be first stated, and then examined. Shakspear's plays are not, in the rigorous sense, either tragedies or comedies, but compositions of a distinct kind; exhibiting the real state of sublunary nature, which partakes of good and evil, joy and sorrow, mingled with endless proportion, and innumerable modes of combination, and expressing the course of the world, in which the loss of one is the gain of the other. But of this chaos of mingled purposes and casualties, the ancient poets, according to the laws which custom had prescribed, selected some of the crimes of men, and some of their absurdities; some the momentous vicissitudes of life, and some the lighter occurrences; some the terrors of distress, and some the gaieties of prosperity. Thus rose the two modes of imitation, *tragedy* and *comedy*, compositions intended to promote different ends, by contrary means, and considered as so little allied, that I do not recollect among the Greeks and Romans, a single writer that attempted both. Shakspeare has united the powers of exciting laughter and sorrow, not only in one
mind

mind, but in one composition. Almost all his plays are divided between serious and ludicrous characters, and in the successive evolutions of the design, sometimes produce seriousness and sorrow, and sometimes levity and laughter.

“ Through all the different denominations of the drama, Shakspeare's mode of composition is the same; an interchange of seriousness and merriment, by which the mind is softened at one time, and exhilarated at another. But whatever be his purpose, whether to gladden or depress, or to conduct the story with vehemence or emotion, through tracts of easy and familiar dialogue, he never fails to attain his purpose; as he commands us, we laugh or mourn, or sit silent with quiet expectation, in tranquillity, without indifference.

“ When Shakspeare's plan is understood, most of the criticisms of Rhymer and Voltaire vanish away. The play of *Hamlet* is opened, without impropriety, by two centinels. Iago bellows at Brabantio's window without injury to the scheme of the play, though in terms which a modern audience would not easily endure. The character of Polonius is reasonable and useful, and the Grave-diggers themselves may be heard with applause.

“ Shakspeare engaged in dramatic poetry with the world open before him; the rules of the ancients were yet known to few; the public judgment was unformed; he had no example of such fame as might force him upon imitation, nor critics of such authority, as might restrain his extravagance. He therefore indulged his natural disposition; and his disposition, as Rymer has remarked, led him to comedy. Tragedy he often writes with great appearance of toil and study, what is written at last with little felicity; but in his comic scenes, he seems to produce, without labour, what no labour can improve. In tragedy he is always struggling after some occasion to be comic; but in comedy he seems to repose, or to luxuriate, as in a mode of thinking congenial to his nature. In his tra-

gic scenes there is always something wanting; but his comedy often surpasses expectation or desire. His comedy pleases by the thoughts and the language; and his tragedy, for the greater part, by incident and action. His tragedy seems to be skill, his comedy instinct. The force of his comic scenes has suffered little diminution from the change made by a century and an half in manners or in words. As his personages act upon principles arising from genuine passion, very little modified by particular forms, their pleasures and vexations are communicable to all times, and to all places; they are natural, and therefore durable; the adventitious peculiarities of personable habits, are only superficial dyes, bright and pleasing for a little while, yet soon fading to a dim tinct, without any remains of former lustre; but the discrimination of true passion are the colours of nature; they pervade the whole mass, and can only perish with the body that exhibits them. The accidental compositions of heterogeneous modes are dissolved by the chance which combined them; but the uniform simplicity of primitive qualities neither admits nor suffers decay. The sand heaped by one flood is scattered by another, but the rock always continues in its place. The stream of time, which is continually washing the dissoluble fabrics of other poets, passes without injury by the adamant of Shakspeare.

“ Shakspeare, with his excellencies, has likewise faults, and faults sufficient to obscure and overwhelm any other merit. I shall shew in the proportion in which they appear to me, without envious malignity, or superstitious veneration. No question can be more innocently discussed, than a dead poet's pretensions to renown; and little regard is due to that bigotry which sets candour higher than truth.

“ His first defect is that to which may be imputed most of the evil in books or in men. He sacrifices virtue to convenience, and is so much more careful to please than to instruct, that he seems to write without
any

any moral purpose. From his writings, indeed, a system of social duty may be selected, for he that thinks reasonably must think morally, but his precepts and axioms drop casually from him; he makes no just distribution of good or evil, nor is always careful to shew in the virtuous a disapprobation of the wicked; he carries his persons indifferently through right and wrong, and, at the close, dismisses them without further care, and leaves their examples to operate by chance. This fault the barbarity of his age cannot extenuate; for it is always a writer's duty to make the world better, and justice is a virtue independent on time and place.

"The plots are often so loosely formed, that a very slight consideration may improve them; and so carelessly pursued, that he seems not always fully to comprehend his own design. He omits opportunities of instructing or delighting, which the train of his story seems to force upon him; and apparently rejects those exhibitions which would be more affecting, for the sake of those which are more easy. It may be observed, in many of his plays, that the latter part is evidently neglected. When he found himself near the end of his work, and in view of his reward, he shortened the labour, to snatch the profit. He therefore remits his efforts, where he should most vigorously exert them; and his catastrophe is improbably produced, or imperfectly represented.

"He had no regard to distinction of time or place, but gives to one age or nation, without scruple, the customs, institutions, and opinions of another, at the expence not only of likelihood, but of possibility. Shakspeare, indeed, was not the only violator of chronology; for in the same age, Sidney, who wanted not the advantages of learning, has, in his *Arcadia*, confounded the pastoral with the feudal times; the days of innocence, quiet, and security, with those of turbulence, violence and adventure.

"In his comic scenes he is seldom very successful,
C 2 when

28 EXTRACTS FROM DR. JOHNSON'S PREFACE.

when he engages his characters in reciprocations of smartness, and contests of sarcasms; these jests are commonly gross, and their pleasantry licentious; neither his gentlemen nor his ladies have much delicacy, nor are sufficiently distinguished from his clowns, by any appearance of refined manners.

"In tragedy his performance seems constantly to be worse, as his labour is more. The effusions of passion which exigence forces out, are for the most part striking and energetic; but whenever he solicits his invention, or strains his faculties, the effect of his throes is tumour, meanness, tediousness, and obscurity.

"In narration he affects a disproportionate pomp of diction and a wearisome train of circumlocution, and tells the incident imperfectly in many words, which might have been more plainly delivered in few. Narration, in dramatic poetry, is naturally tedious, as it is unanimated and inactive, and obstructs the progress of the action, it should therefore always be rapid, and enlivened by frequent interruption. Shakspeare found its incumbrance, and instead of lightening it by brevity, endeavoured to recommend it by dignity and splendour.

"But the admirers of this great poet have most reason to complain when he approaches nearest to his highest excellence, and seems fully resolved to sink them into dejection, and mollify them with tender emotions by the fall of greatness, the danger of innocence, or the crosses of love. What he does best, he soon ceases to do. He is not long soft and pathetic without some idle conceit or contemptible equivocation. He no sooner begins to move, than he counteracts himself; and terror and pity, as they are rising in the mind, are checked and blasted by sudden frigidity.

A quibble is, to Shakspeare, what luminous vapours are to the traveller; he follows it at all adventures: it is sure to lead him out of his way, and sure

to

to engulf him in the mire. It has some malignant power over his mind, and its fascinations are irresistible. Whatever be the dignity or profundity of his disquisition, whether he be enlarging knowledge, or exalting affection; whether he be amusing attention with incidents or enchainng it in suspense, let but a quibble spring up before him, and he leaves his work unfinished. A quibble is the golden apple for which he will always turn aside from his career, or stoop from his elevation. A quibble, poor and barren as it is, gave him such delight, that he was content to purchase it by the sacrifice of reason, propriety and truth. A quibble was to him the fatal Cleopatra, for which he lost the world, and was content to lose it.

"It will be thought strange, that in enumerating the defects of this writer, I have not yet mentioned his neglect of the unities, his violation of those laws which have been instituted and established by the joint authority of poets and critics."

"For his other deviations from the art of writing, I resign him to critical justice, without making any other demand in his favour, than that which must be indulged to all human excellence, that his virtues be rated with his failings; but from the censure which this irregularity may bring upon him, I shall, with due reverence to that learning which I must oppose, adventure to try how I can defend him."

"To the unities of time and place he has shewn no regard; and perhaps a nearer view of the principles on which they stand will diminish their value, and withdraw from them the veneration which from the time of Corneille they have very generally received, by discovering that they have given more trouble to the poet, than pleasure to the auditor."

"The necessity of preserving the unities of time and place arises from the supposed necessity of making the drama credible. The critics hold it impossible that an action of months or years can be possibly believed to pass in three hours; or that the spectator can

30 EXTRACTS FROM DR. JOHNSON'S PREFACE

suppose himself to sit in the theatre, while ambassadors go and return from distant kings; while armies are levied, and towns besieged; while an exile wanders and returns, or till he whom they saw courting his mistress shall lament the untimely fall of his son. The mind revolts from evident falsehood, and fiction loses its force when it departs from the resemblance of reality.

“ From the narrow limitation of time necessarily arises the contraction of place. The spectator who knows that he saw the first act at Alexandria, cannot suppose that he sees the next at Rome, at a distance to which not the dragons of Medea could in so short a time have transported him, he knows with certainty that he has not changed his place, and he knows that place cannot change itself: that what was a house cannot become a plain; and that what was Thebes can never be Persepolis.

“ Such is the triumphant language with which a critic exults over the misery of an irregular poet, and exults commonly without resistance or reply. It is time therefore to tell him, by the authority of Shakspeare, that he assumes, as an unquestionable principle, a position, which, while his breath is forming into words, his understanding pronounces to be false. It is false, that any representation is taken for reality; that any dramatic fable, in its materiality, was ever credible, or for a single moment was ever credited.

“ It will be asked how the drama moves, if it is not credited? It is credited with all the credit due to a drama. It is credited whenever it moves as a just picture of a real original, as representing to the auditor what he would himself feel, if he were to do or suffer what is there feigned to be suffered or to be done. The reflection that strikes the heart is not that the evils before us are real evils, but that they are evils to which we ourselves may be exposed. If there be any fallacy, it is not that we fancy the players, but that we fancy ourselves, unhappy for the moment; but we rather lament the possibility, than suppose the presence
of

of misery, as a mother weeps over her babe when she remembers that death may take it from her. The delights of tragedy proceed from our consciousness of fiction; if we thought murders and treasons real, they would please no more.

“ Whether Shakspeare knew the unities, and rejected them by design, or deviated from them by happy ignorance, it is, I think, impossible to decide, and useless to enquire. We may reasonably suppose, that when he rose to notice, he did not want the counsels and admonitions of scholars and critics, and that he at last deliberately persisted in a practice, which he might have begun by chance. As nothing is essential to the fable but unity of action, and as the unities of time and place arise evidently from false assumptions, and by circumscribing the extent of the drama, lessen its variety, I cannot think it much to be lamented, that they were unknown by him or not observed; nor, if such another poet could arise, should I very vehemently reproach him, that his first act passed at Venice, and his next in Cyprus. Such violations of rules, merely positive, become the comprehensive genius of Shakspeare, and such censures are suitable to the minute and slender criticism of Voltaire.

“ Voltaire expresses his wonder that our author's extravagancies are endured by a nation, which has seen the tragedy of *Cato*. Let him be answered that Addison speaks the language of poets, and Shakspeare of men. We find in *Cato* innumerable beauties, which enamour us of its author; but we see nothing that acquaints us with human sentiments, or human actions; we place it with the fairest and the noblest progeny which judgment propagates by conjunction with learning; but *Othello* is the vigorous and vivacious offspring of observation impregnated by genius. *Cato* affords a splendid exhibition of artificial and fictitious manners, and delivers just and noble sentiments in diction easy, elevated and harmonious; but its
hopes

32 EXTRACTS FROM DR. JOHNSON'S PREFACE.

hopes and fears communicate no vibrations to the heart; the composition refers us only to the writer; we pronounce the name of *Cato*, but we think on *Addison*.

"The work of a correct and regular writer is a garden accurately formed and diligently planted, varied with shades and scented with flowers; the composition of Shakspeare is a forest, in which oaks extend their branches, and pines tower in the air, interspersed sometimes with weeds and brambles, and sometimes giving shelter to myrtles and roses; filling the eye with awful pomp, and gratifying the mind with endless diversity. Other poets display cabinets of precious rarities, minutely finished, wrought in shape, and polished in brightness.—Shakspeare opens a mine which contains gold and diamonds in inexhaustible plenty, though clouded by incrustations, debased by impurities, and mingled with a mass of meaner minerals.

"It has been much disputed, whether Shakspeare owed his excellence to his own native force, or whether he had the common helps of scholastic education, the precepts of critical science, and the examples of ancient authors. There has always prevailed a tradition that Shakspeare wanted learning, that he had no regular education, nor much skill in the dead languages. Jonson, his friend, affirms, that he "had small Latin and less Greek;" who, besides, that he had no imaginable temptation to falsehood, wrote at a time when the character and acquisitions of Shakspeare were known to multitudes. His evidence ought therefore to decide the controversy, unless some testimony of equal force could be opposed.

"Some have imagined, that they have discovered deep learning in many imitations of old writers; but the examples which I have known urged, were drawn from books translated in his time, or were such easy coincidences of thought, as will happen to all who consider

consider the same subjects; or such remarks on life, or axioms of morality, as float in conversation, and are transmitted through the world in proverbial sentences.

“ Whether he knew the modern languages is uncertain. That his plays have some French scenes proves but little; he might easily procure them to be written; and probably, even though he had known the language in the common degree, he could not have written it without assistance. In the story of *Romeo and Juliet*, he is observed to have followed the English translation, where it deviates from the Italian; but this, on the other part, proves nothing against his knowledge of the original. He was to copy, not what he knew himself, but what was known to his audience.

“ It is most likely that he had learned Latin sufficiently to make him acquainted with construction; but that he never advanced to an easy perusal of the Roman authors. Concerning his skill in modern languages, I can find no sufficient ground of determination; but as no intimations of French or Italian authors have been discovered, though the Italian poetry was then in high esteem, I am inclined to believe, that he read little more than English, and chose for his fables only such tales as he found translated.

“ That much knowledge is scattered over his works is very justly observed by Pope; but it is often such knowledge as books did not supply. He that will understand Shakspeare, must not be content to study him in the closet; he must look for his meaning sometimes among the sports of the field, and sometimes among the manufactures of the shop: there is, however, proof enough that he was a very diligent reader; nor was our language then so indigent of books, but that he might very liberally indulge his curiosity without excursion into foreign literature. Many of the Roman authors were translated, and some of the Greek. The Reformation had filled the kingdom with
theological

34 EXTRACTS FROM DR. JOHNSON'S PREFACE.

theological learning ; most of the topics of human disquisition had found English writers ; and poetry had been cultivated, not only with diligence, but success. This was a stock of knowledge sufficient for a mind so capable of appropriating and improving it.

“ But the greater part of his excellence was the product of his own genius. He found the English stage in a state of the utmost rudeness ; no essays either in tragedy or comedy had appeared, from which it could be discovered to what degree of delight either one or the other might be carried. Neither character nor dialogue were yet understood. Shakspeare may be truly said to have introduced them among us, and in some of his happier scenes to have carried them both to the utmost height.

“ There is a vigilance of observation, and accuracy of distinction, which books and precepts cannot confer ; from this, almost all original and native excellence proceeds. Shakspeare must have looked upon mankind with perspicacity, in the highest degree curious and attentive. Other writers borrow their characters from preceding writers, and diversify them only by the accidental appendages of present manners ; the dress is a little varied, but the body is the same. Our author had both matter and form to provide ; for, except the characters of Chaucer, to whom I think he is not much indebted, there were no writers in English, and perhaps not many in other modern languages, which shewed life in its native colours.

“ Boyle congratulated himself upon his high birth, because it favoured his curiosity, by facilitating his access. Shakspeare had no such advantage ; he came to London a needy adventurer, and lived for a time by very mean employments. Many works of genius and of learning have been performed in states of life that appear very little favourable to thought or inquiry, so many, that he who considers them, is inclined to think that he sees enterprise and perseverance predominating over all external agency, and bidding help and hindrance

drance vanish before them. The genius of Shakspeare was not to be depressed by the weight of poverty, nor limited by the narrow conversation, to which men in want are inevitably condemned; the incumbrances of his fortune was shaken from his mind, *as dew drops from a lion's mane*.

“ Though he had so many difficulties to encounter, and so little assistance to surmount them, he has been able to obtain an exact knowledge of many modes of life, and many casts of native dispositions; to vary them with great multiplicity; to mark them by nice distinctions, and to shew them in full view by proper combinations. In this part of his performances he had more to imitate, but has been himself imitated by all succeeding writers; and it may be doubted, whether, from all his succession, more maxims of theoretical knowledge, or more rules of practical prudence, can be collected, than he alone has given to his country.

To him we must ascribe the praise, unless Spenser may divide it with him, of having first discovered to how much smoothness and harmony the English language could be softened. He has speeches, sometimes scenes, which have all the delicacy of Rowe, without his effeminacy. He endeavours, indeed, commonly to strike by the force and vigour of his dialogue; but he never executes his purpose better, than when he tries to sooth by softness. Yet it must be at last confessed, that as we owe every thing to him, he owes something to us; that if much of his praise is paid by perception and judgment, much is likewise given by custom and veneration. I am indeed far from thinking, that his works were wrought to his own ideas of perfection; when they were such as would satisfy the audience, they satisfied the writer. It is seldom that authors, though more studious of fame than Shakspeare, rise much above the standard of their own age: to add a little to what is best, will always be sufficient for present praise; and those who find themselves exalted into
mea

36 EXTRACTS FROM DR. JOHNSON'S PREFACE.
fame, are willing to credit their encomiasts, and to spare the labour of contending with themselves.

“ It does not appear, that Shakspeare thought his works worthy of posterity; that he levied any ideal tribute upon future times, or had any future prospects than of present popularity and present profits; when his plays had been acted, his hope was at an end; he solicited no addition of honour from the reader. He therefore made no scruple to repeat the same jests in many dialogues, or to entangle different plots by the same kind of perplexity, which may be at least forgiven him, by those who recollect, that of Congreve's four comedies, two are concluded by a marriage in a mask, by a deception, which perhaps never happened, and which, whether likely or not, he did not invent.

“ So careless was this great poet of future fame, that though he retired to ease and plenty, while he was yet little declined into the vale of years, before he could be disgusted with fatigue, or disabled by infirmity, he made no collection of his works, nor desired to rescue those that had been already published from the depravations that obscured them; or secure to the rest a better destiny, by giving them to the world in their genuine state.”



RECOMMENDATORY POEMS.

ODE ON THE GENIUS OF SHAKSPEARE.

RAPT from the glance of mortal eye,
Say bursts thy Genius to the world of light ?
Seeks it yon star-bespangled sky ?
Or skims it fields with rapid flight ?
Or mid' yon plains where Fancy strays, 5
Courts it the balmy-breathing gale ?
Or where the violet pale
Droops o'er the green-embroider'd stream ;
Or where young Zephyr stirs the rustling sprays,
Lies all dissolv'd in fairy dream. 10
O'er yon bleak deserts unfrequented round
See'st thou where Nature treads the deepening gloom,
Sits on yon hoary tow'r with ivy crown'd,
Or wildly wails o'er thy lamented tomb ;
Hear'st thou the solemn music wind along ? 15
Or thrills the warbling note in thy mellifluous song ?
Oft while on earth, 'twas thine to rove
Where'er the wild-ey'd Goddess lov'd to roam,
To trace serene the gloomy grove.
Or haunt meek Quiet's simple dome ; 20
Still hovering round the nine appear,
That pour the soul-transporting strain ;
Join'd to the Loves' gay train,
The loose-rob'd Graces crown'd with flow'rs,
The light wing'd gales that lead the vernal year, 25
And wake the rosy-featur'd hours.
O'er all bright Fancy's beamy radiance shone,
How flam'd thy bosom as her charms reveal !
Her fire-clad eye sublime, her starry zone,
Her tresses loose that wanton'd on the gale ; 30
On thee the Goddess fix'd her ardent look,
Then from her glowing lips these melting accents broke.
" To Thee, my favourite son, belong
" The lays that steal the listening hour ;
" To pour the rapture-darting song, 35
" To paint gay hope's elysian bower.

" From Nature's hand to snatch the dart,
 " To cleave with pangs the bleeding heart ;
 " Or lightly sweep the trembling string,
 " And call the Loves with purple wing 40
 " From the blue deep wherein they dwell
 " With Naiads in the pearly cell,
 " Soft on the sea-born Goddess's gaze ;
 " Or in the loose robe's floating maze,
 " Dissolv'd in downy slumbers rest ; 45
 " Or flutter o'er her panting breast,
 " Or wild to melt the yielding soul,
 " Let sorrow clad in fable stole
 " Slow to thy musing thought appear ;
 " Or pensive Pity pale ; 50
 " Or Love's desponding tale
 " Call from th' intender'd heart the sympathetic tear."

Say whence the magic of thy mind ?
 Why thrills thy music on the springs of thought ?
 Why, at thy pencil's touch refin'd 55
 Starts into life the glowing draught ?
 On yonder fairy carpet laid,
 Where beauty pours eternal bloom,
 And Zephyr breathes perfume ;
 There nightly to the tranced eye 60
 Profuse the radiant goddess stood display'd,
 With all her smiling offspring nigh,
 Sudden the mantling cliff, the arched wood,
 The broider'd mead, the landskip, and the grove,
 Hills, vales, and sky-dipt seas, and torrents rude, 65
 Grotts, rills, and shades, and bowers that breath'd of
 All burst to fight !—while glancing on the view, [love
 Titania's sporting train brush'd lightly o'er the dew.

The pale-eyed genius of the shade
 Led thy bold step to Prosper's magic bower ; 70
 Whose voice the howling winds obey'd ;
 Whose dark spell chain'd the rapid hour :
 Then rose serene the sea-girt isle ;
 Gay scenes by fancy's touch refin'd
 Glow'd to the musing mind : 75

Such visions bless the hermit's dream,
 When hovering angels prompt his placid smile,
 Or paint some high ecstatic theme.
 Then flam'd Miranda on th' enraptur'd gaze,
 Then sail'd bright Ariel on the bat's fleet wing : 80
 Or starts the list'ning throng in still amaze !
 The wild note trembling on th' aerial string !
 The form in heav'ns resplendent vesture gay
 Floats on the mantling cloud, and pours the melting lay.

O lay me near yon limpid stream, 85

Whose murmur sooths the ear of woe !

There in some sweet poetic dream

Let Fancy's bright Elysium glow !

'Tis done :—o'er all the blushing mead

The dark wood shakes his cloudy head ; 90

Below, the lily-fringed dale

Breathes its mild fragrance on the gale ;

While in pastime all unseen,

Titania robed in mantle green

Sports on the mossy bank :—her train 95

Skims light along the gleaming plain ;

Or to the fluttering breeze unfold

The blue wing streak'd with beamy gold,

Its pinions opening to the light !—

Say, bursts the vision on my sight ? 100

Ah, no ! by Shakspeare's pencil drawn,

The beauteous shapes appear ;

While meek-eyed Cynthia near

Illumes with streamy ray the silver-mantled lawn.

But hark ! the tempest howls afar ! 105

Bursts the loud whirlwind o'er the pathless waste !

What cherub blows the trump of war ?

What Demon rides the stormy blast ?

Red from the lightning's livid blaze,

The bleak heath rushes on the sight ; 110

Then wrapt in sudden night

Dissolves.—But ah ! what kingly form

Roams the lone desert's desolated maze !

Unaw'd ! nor heeds the sweeping storm.

Ye pale-eyed lightnings spare the cheek of age ! 115
 Vain wish ; -- tho' anguish heaves the bursting groan,
 Deaf as the flint, the marble ear of rage
 Hears not the mourner's unfavailing moan :
 Heart-pierc'd he bleeds, and stung with wild despair,
 Bares his time-blasted head, and tears his silver hair.

Lo ! on yon long-resounding shore, 121
 Where the rock totters o'er the headlong deep,
 What phantoms bath'd in infant gore
 Stand muttering on the dizzy steep !
 Their murmur shakes the zephyr's wing ! 125
 The storm obeys their powerful spell ;
 See, from his gloomy cell
 Fierce Winter starts ! his scowling eye,
 Bloats the fair mantle of the breathing spring,
 And lowers along the ruffled sky. 130
 To the deep vault the yelling harpies run,*
 Its yawning mouth receives th' infernal crew.
 Dim thro' the black gloom winks the glimmering fun,
 And the pale furnace gleams with brimstone blue.
 Hell howls : and fiends that join the dire acclaim 135
 Dance on the bubbling tide, and point the livid flame.
 But ah ! on sorrow's cypress bough
 Can Beauty breath her genial bloom ?
 On Death's cold cheek will Passion glow ? 140
 Or Music warble from the tomb ?
 There sleeps the bard, whose tuneful tongue
 Pour'd the full stream of mazy song.
 Young Spring with lip of ruby, here
 Showers from her lap the blushing year ; 145
 While along the turf reclin'd,
 The loose wing swimming on the wind,
 The Loves with forward gesture bold,
 Sprinkling the sod with spangling gold ;
 And oft the blue-eyed Graces trim, 150
 Dance lightly round on downy limb ;
 Oft too, when Eve demure and still
 Chequers the green dale's purling rill,

* The witches in Macbeth.

Sweet Fancy pours th' plaintive strain,
 Or wrapt in soothing dream, 155
 By Avon's ruffled stream, [plain.
 Hears the low-murmuring gale that dies along the

THE TOMB OF SHAKSPEARE,

A VISION,

By John Gilbert Cooper, Esq.

WHAT time the jocund rosy-bosom'd hours
 Led forth the train of Phœbus and the spring,
 And Zephyr mild profusely scatter'd flowers
 On earth's green mantle from his musky wing, 4

The morn unbarr'd th' ambrosial gates of light,
 Westward the raven-pinnion'd darkness flew,
 The landscape smil'd in vernal beauty bright,
 And to their graves the fullen ghosts withdrew. 8

The nightingale no longer swell'd her throat
 With love-lorn plainings tremulous and slow,
 And on the wings of silence ceas'd to float.
 The gargling notes of her melodious woe: 12

The god of sleep mysterious visions led
 In gay procession, 'fore the mental eye;
 And my freed soul awhile her mansion fled,
 To try her plumes for immortality. 16

Through fields of air, methought, I took my flight,
 Through every clime, o'er every region pass'd,
 No Paradise or ruin 'scap'd my sight,
 Hesperian garden, or Cimmerian waste. 20

On Avon's banks I lit, whose streams appear
 To wind with eddies find round Shakspeare's tomb,
 The year's first feath'ry songsters warble near,
 And vi'lets breathe, and earliest roses bloom. 24

Here Fancy sat, (her dewy fingers cold,
 Decking with flow'ret fresh th' unsullied sod,)
 And bath'd with tears the sad sepulchral mould,
 Her fav'rite offspring's long and last abode. 28

" Ah! what avails," she cry'd, " a poet's name ?

" Ah! what avails th' immortalizing breath,

" To snatch from dumb oblivion others fame ?

" My darling child here lies a prey to death !

32

" Let gentle Otway, white-rob'd Pity's priest,

" From grief domestic teach the tears to flow,

" Or Southern captivate th' impassion'd breast,

" With heart-felt sighs and sympathy of woe.

36

" For not to these *his* genius was confin'd,

" Nature and I each tuneful pow'r had given,

" Poetic transports of the madding mind,

40

" And the wing'd words that waft the soul to heaven.

" The fiery glance of th' intellectual eye,

" Piercing all objects of Creation's store,

" Which in this world's extended surface lie ;

" And plastic thought that still created more."

44

" O grant," with eager rapture I reply'd,

" Grant me, great goddess of the changeful eye,

" To view each being in poetic pride,

" To whom thy son gave immortality."

48

Sweet Fancy smil'd, and wav'd her mystic rod,

When strait these visions felt her powerful arm,

And one by one succeeded at her nod,

As valiant Sprites obey the wizard charm.

52

First a celestial form (of azure hue

Whose mantle, bound with brede ætherial flow'd

To each soft breeze its balmy breath that drew)

Swift down the sun-beams of the noon-tide rode.

56

Obedient to the necromantic sway

Of an old sage, to solitude resign'd,

With fenny vapours he obscur'd the day,

Launch'd the long lightning, and let loose the wind.

He whirl'd the tempest through the howling air,

61

Rattled the dreadful thunder-clap on high,

And rais'd the roaring elemental war

Betwixt the sea green waves and azure sky.

64

Then, like heaven's mild ambassador of love
 To man repentant, bid the tumult cease,
 Smooth'd the blue bosom of the realms above,
 And hush'd the rebel elements to peace. 68

Unlike to this in spirit or in mien
 Another form succeeded to my view ;
 A two-legg'd brute, which Nature made in spleen,
 Or from the loathing womb unfinish'd drew. 72

Scarce could he syllable the curse he thought,
 Prone were his eyes to earth, his mind to evil,
 A carnal fiend to imperfection wrought,
 The mongrel offspring of a witch and devil. 76

Next bloom'd, upon an ancient forest's bound,
 The flow'ry margin of a silent stream,
 O'er-arch'd with oaks, with ivy mantled round,
 And gilt by silver Cynthia's maiden beam. 80

On the green carpet of th' unbended grass,
 A dapper train of female fairies play'd,
 And ey'd their gambols in the wat'ry glass,
 That smoothly stole along the shad'wy glade. 84

Through these the queen Titania pass'd ador'd,
 Mounted aloft in her imperial car,
 Journeying to see great Oberon her lord
 Wage the mock battles of a sportive war. 88

Arm'd cap-a-pee forth march'd the fairy king,
 A stouter warrior never took the field,
 His threat'ning lance a hornet's horrid sting,
 The sharded beetle's scale his sable shield. 92

Around their chief the elfin host appear'd ;
 Each little helmet sparkled like a star,
 And their sharp spears in pierceless phalanx rear'd,
 A grove of thistles, glitter'd in the air. 96

The scene then chang'd, from this romantic land,
 To a bleak waste by bound'ry unconfined,
 Where three swart sisters of the *weird* band
 Were mutt'ring curses to the troublous wind. 100

Pale Want had wither'd every furrow'd face,
 Bow'd was each carcase with the weight of years,
 And each funk eye-ball from its hollow case
 Distill'd cold rheum's involuntary tears. 104

Hors'd on three staves they posted to the bourn
 Of a drear island, where the pendant brow
 Of a rough rock, shagg'd horribly with thorn,
 Frown'd on the boist'rous waves which rag'd below.

Deep in a gloomy grot remote from day, 109
 Where smiling Comfort never shew'd her face,
 Where light ne'er enter'd, save one rueful ray
 Discovering all the terrors of the place. 112

They held damn'd myst'ries with infernal state,
 Whilst ghastly spectres glided slowly by,
 The screech-owl scream'd the dying call of fate,
 And ravens croak'd their baleful augury. 116

No human footstep cheer'd the dread abode,
 No sign of living creature could be seen,
 Save where the reptile snake, or sullen toad,
 The murky floor had soil'd with venom green. 120

Sudden I heard the whirlwind's hollow sound,
 Each *weird* sister vanish'd into smoke,
 Now a dire yell of spirits underground
 Thro' troubled Earth's wide yawning surface broke;

When lo! each injur'd apparition rose; 125
 Aghast the murd'rer started from his bed;
 Guilt's trembling breath his heart's red current froze,
 And Horror's dew-drops bath'd his frantic head. 128

More had I seen—but now the god of day
 O'er earth's broad breast his flood of light had spread,
 When Morpheus call'd his fickle dreams away,
 And on *their* wings each bright illusion fled. 132

Yet still the dear enchantress of the brain
 My waking eyes with wishful wand'rings sought,
 Whose magic will controls th' ideal train,
 The ever-restless progeny of Thought. 136

RECOMMENDATORY POEMS.

45

- " Sweet power," I said, " for others gild the ray
 " Of Wealth, or Honour's folly-feather'd crown,
 " Or lead the madding multitude astray,
 " To grasp at air-blown bubbles of renown. 140
 " Me (humbler lot!) let blameless bliss engage,
 " Free from the noble mob's ambitious strife,
 " Free from the muck-worm miser's lucrous rage,
 " In calm Contentment's cottage vale of life. 144
 " If frailties there (for who from them is free?)
 " Through Error's maze my devious footsteps lead,
 " Let them be frailties of humanity,
 " And my heart plead the pardon of my head. 148
 " Let not my reason impiously require
 " What heav'n has plac'd beyond its narrow span,
 " But teach it to subdue each fierce desire,
 " Which wars within its own small empire, man. 152
 " Teach me, what all believe, but few possess;
 " That life's best science is ourselves to know,
 " The first of human blessings is to bless,
 " And happiest he who feels another's woe. 156
 " Thus cheaply wise, and innocently great,
 " While Time's smooth sand shall regularly pass,
 " Each destin'd atom's quiet course I'll wait,
 " Nor rashly break, nor wish to stop the glass. 160
 " And when in death my peaceful ashes lie,
 " If e'er some tongue congenial speaks my name,
 " Friendship shall never blush to breathe a sigh,
 " And great ones envy such an honest fame." 164



DEDICATION.

VENUS AND ADONIS.

Vilia miretur vulgus, mihi flavus Apollo
Pocula Castalia plena ministret aqua.
Ovid. Amor. l. i El. 15.

TO THE RIGHT HON.

HENRY WRIOTHESLY,

Earl of Southampton and Baron of Tichfield.

RIGHT HONOURABLE,

I KNOW not how I shall offend, in dedicating my unpolished lines to your Lordship; nor how the world will censure me, for choosing so strong a prop to support so weak a burden: Only if your honour seem but pleased, I can account myself highly praised, and vow to take advantage of all idle hours, till I have honoured you with some graver labour. But if the first heir of my invention prove deformed, I shall be sorry it had so noble a godfather, and never after ear so barren a land, for fear it yield me still so bad a harvest. I leave it to your honourable survey, and your honour to your heart's content; which I wish may always answer your own wish, and the world's hopeful expectation.

Your honour's in all duty,

W. SHAKSPEARE.



VENUS AND ADONIS.

EVEN as the sun, with purple colour'd face,
 Had ta'en his last leave of the weeping morn,
 Rose-cheek'd Adonis hied him to the chace:
 Hunting he lov'd, but love he laugh'd to scorn.
 Sick-thoughted Venus makes amain unto him,
 And like a bold-fac'd suitor 'gins to woo him. 6

"Thrice fairer than myself!" thus she began,
 "The field's chief flow'r! sweet above compare!
 "Stain to all nymphs! more lovely than a man!
 "More white and red than doves and roses are.
 "Nature, that made thee, with herself at strife,
 "Saith, that the world hath ending with thy life. 12

"Vouchsafe thou wonder! to alight thy steed,
 "And rein his proud head to the saddle bow;
 "If thou wilt deign this favour, for thy meed,
 "A thousand honey secrets shalt thou know.
 "Here come and sit, where serpent never hisses,
 "And being set, I'll smother thee with kisses. 18

"And yet not cloy thy lips with loath'd satiety,
 "But rather furnish them amid their plenty;
 "Making them red and pale with fresh variety;
 "Ten kisses short as one, one long as twenty.
 "A summer's day will seem an hour but short,
 "Being wasted in such time-beguiling sport." 24

With this she seizeth on his sweating palm,
 The president of pith and livelihood,
 And trembling in her passion calls its balm,
 Earth's sovereign salve to do a goddess good.
 Being so enrag'd, desire doth lend her force,
 Courageously to pluck him from his horse. 30

Over one arm the lusty courser's rein,
 Under the other was the tender boy,
 Who blush'd and pouted in a dull disdain,
 With leaden appetite, unapt to toy.
 She red and hot, as coals of glowing fire;
 He red for shame, but frosty with desire. 36

The studded bridle, on a ragged bough,
 Nimble she fastens (O how quick is love!)
 The steed is stalled up, and even now
 To tie the rider she begins to prove.
 Backward she push'd him, as she would be thrust,
 And govern'd him in strength, though not in lust. 42

Soon was she along, as he was down,
 Each leaning on their elbows and their hips;
 Now doth she stroke his cheek, now doth she frown,
 And 'gins to chide, but soon she stops his lips:
 And kissing speaks with lustful language broken,
 "If thou wilt chide, thy lips shall never open." 48

He burns with bashful shame; she with her tears
 Doth quench the maiden burning of his cheeks:
 Then with her windy sighs, and golden hairs,
 To fan and blow them dry again she seeks.
 He says she is immodest, blames her mis;
 What follows more, she smothers with a kiss. 54

Even as an empty eagle, sharp by fast,
 Tires with her beak, on feathers, flesh and bone,
 Shaking her wings, devouring all in haste,
 Till either gorge be stuff'd, or prey be gone:
 Even so she kiss'd his brow, his cheek, his chin,
 And where she ends, she doth anew begin. 60

Forc'd to consent, but never to obey,
 Panting he lies, and breathing in her face:
 She feedeth on the steam as on a prey,
 And calls it heavenly moisture! air of grace!
 Wishing her cheeks were gardens full of flowers,
 So they were dew'd with such distilling showers. 66

Look how a bird lies tangled in a net,
 So fasten'd in her arms Adonis lies:
 Pure shame and aw'd resistance made him fret,
 Which bred more beauty in his angry eyes.
 Rain added to a river that is rank,
 Perforce will force it overflow the bank. 72

Still she entreats, and prettily entreats:
For to a pretty ear she tunes her tale.
Still he is fullen, still he lowers and frets,
'Twixt crimson shame, and anger ashy pale.
Being red she loves him best, and being white,
Her breast is better'd with a more delight.

78

Look how he can, she cannot choose but love,
And by her fair immortal hand she swears,
From his soft bosom never to remove,
Till he take truce with her contending tears;
Which long have rain'd, making her cheeks all wet,
And one sweet kiss shall pay this countless debt.

84

Upon this promise did he raise his chin,
Like a Dive-dapper peering thro' a wave,
Who being look'd on, ducks as quickly in:
So offers he to give what she did crave;
But when his lips were ready for his pay,
He winks, and turns his lips another way.

90

Never did passenger, in summer's heat,
More thirst for drink, than she for this good turn,
Her help she sees, but help she cannot get,
She baths in water, yet in fire must burn.

"Oh pity," gan she cry, "flint-hearted boy!
" 'Tis but a kiss I beg, why art thou coy?"

96

"I have been woo'd, as I entreat thee now,
"E'en by the stern and direful god of war,
"Whose sinewy neck in battle ne'er did bow,
"Who conquers where he comes in every jar:
"Yet hath he been my captive and my slave,
"And begg'd for that which thou unask'd shalt have."

101

"Over my altars hath he hung his lance,
"His batter'd shield, his uncontrolled crest;
"And for my sake hath learn'd to sport and dance,
"To coy, to wanton, dally, smile and jest:
"Scorning his churlish drum, and ensign red,
"Making my arms his field, his tent my bed."

108

- " Thus him, that over-rul'd, I over-sway'd ;
 " Leading him prisoner in a red-rose chain.
 " Strong temper'd steel, his stronger strength obey'd,
 " Yet was he servile to my coy disdain.
 " Oh be not proud, nor brag not of thy might,
 " For mast'ring her, that foil'd the god of fight ! 114
- " Touch but my lips with those fair lips of thine,
 " (Tho' mine be not so fair, yet they are red)
 " The kifs shall be thine own, as well as mine ;
 " What see'st thou on the ground ? hold up thy head :
 " Look in mine eye-balls, where thy beauty lies,
 " Then why not lips on lips, since eyes on eyes ? 120
- " Art thou ashamed to kifs ? Then wink again,
 " And I will wink, so shall the day seem night,
 " Love keeps his revels, where there be but twain ;
 " Be bold to play, our sport is not in fight.
 " These blue-vein'd violets, whereon we lean,
 " Never can blab, nor know they what we mean. 126
- " The tender spring upon thy tempting lip
 " Shews thee unripe ; yet may'st thou well be tasted ;
 " Make use of time, let not advantage slip,
 " Beauty within itself should not be wasted.
 " Fair flowers, that are not gather'd in their prime,
 " Rot and consume themselves in little time. 132
- " Were I hard-favour'd, foul, or wrinkled old,
 " Ill-natur'd, crooked, churlish, harsh in voice,
 " O'erworn, despised, rheumatic and cold,
 " Thick-sighted, barren, lean, and lacking juice : [thee,
 " Then might'st thou pause, for then I were not for
 " But, having no defects, why dost abhor me ? 138
- " Thou can'st not see one wrinkle in my brow,
 " Mine eyes are grey, and bright, and quick in turning,
 " My beauty, as the spring, doth yearly grow ;
 " My flesh is soft and plump, my marrow burning ;
 " My smooth moist hand, were it with thy hand felt,
 " Would in thy palm dissolve, or seem to melt. 144

" Bid me discourse, I will enchant thine ear,
 " Or, like a fairy, trip upon the green ;
 " Or, like a nymph, with long dishevel'd hair,
 " Dance on the sands, and yet no footing seen.
 " Love is a spirit all compact of fire,
 " Not gross to sink, but light, and will aspire. 150

" Witness this primrose bank whereon I lie,
 " These forceless flowers, like sturdy trees, support me :
 " Two strengthless doves will draw me thro' the sky
 " From morn till night, ev'n where I list to sport me.
 " Is love so light, sweet boy, and may it be,
 " That thou shouldst think it heavy unto thee ? 156

" Is thine own heart to thine own face affected ?
 " Can thy right hand seize love upon thy left ?
 " Then woo thy self, be of thy self rejected,
 " Steal thine own freedom, and complain of theft.
 " Narcissus so himself, himself forsook,
 " And dy'd to kiss his shadow in the brook. 162

" Torches are made to light, jewels to wear,
 " Dainties to taste, fresh beauty for the use,
 " Herbs for their smell, and sappy plants to bear ;
 " Things growing to themselves are growth's abuse :
 " Seeds spring from seeds, and beauty breedeth beauty ;
 " Thou wert begot, to get it is thy duty. 168

" Upon the earth's increase why shouldst thou feed,
 " Unless the earth with thy increase be fed ?
 " By law of nature thou art bound to breed,
 " That thine may live, when thou thyself art dead :
 " And so in spite of death, thou dost survive,
 " In that thy likeness still is left alive." 174

By this the love-sick queen began to sweat,
 For where they lay, the shadow had forsook them :
 And Titan, tired in the mid-day heat,
 With burning eye did hotly overlook them :
 Wishing Adonis had his team to guide,
 So he were like him, and by Venus side. 180

And now Adonis, with a lazy spright,
 And with a heavy, dark, disliking eye,
 His low'ring brows o'erwhelming his fair sight,
 Like misty vapours, when they blot the sky;
 Souring his cheeks, cries "fie, no more of love,
 "The sun doth burn my face, I must remove." 186

"Ah me!" quoth Venus, "young, and so unkind!
 "What bare excuses mak'st thou to be gone?
 "I'll figh celestial breath, whose gentle wind
 "Shall cool the heat of this descending sun.
 "I'll make a shadow for thee of my hairs, 191
 "If they burn too, I'll quench them with my tears.

"The sun that shines from heaven shines but warm,
 "And lo, I lie between the sun and thee!
 "The heat I have from thence doth little harm,
 "Thine eyes dart forth the fire that burneth me.
 "And, were I not immortal, life were done,
 "Between this heav'nly, and this earthly sun. 198

"Art thou obdurate, flinty, hard as steel?
 "Nay more than flint, for stone at rain relenteth:
 "Art thou a woman's son, and canst not feel
 "What 'tis to love, how want of love tormenteth?
 "Oh! had thy mother borne so bad a mind,
 "She had not brought forth thee, but died unkind. 204

"What am I, that thou shouldst condemn me thus?
 "Or what great danger dwells upon my suit?
 "What were thy lips the worse for one poor kiss!
 "Speak fair: but speak fair words, or else be mute.
 "Give me one kiss, I'll give it thee again,
 "And one for int'rest, if thou wilt have twain. 210

"Fie, lifeless picture, cold and senseless stone,
 "Well-painted idol, image dull and dead;
 "Statue contenting but the eye alone,
 "Thing like a man, but of no woman bred.
 "Thou art no man, tho' of a man's complexion
 "For men will kiss e'en by their own direction." 216

This said, impatience choaks her pleading tongue,
And swelling passion doth provoke a pause;
Red cheeks and fiery eyes blaze forth her wrong,
Being judge in love, she cannot right her cause.
And now she weeps, and now she fain would speak,
And now her sobs do her intendments break. 222

Sometimes she shakes her head, and then his hand:
Now gazeth she on him, now on the ground;
Sometimes her arms infold him like a band;
She would, he will not in her arms be bound;
And when from hence he struggles to be gone,
She locks her lily fingers one in one. 228

"Fondling," saith she, "since I have hemm'd thee
"Within the circuit of this ivory pale, [here,
"I'll be the park, and thou shalt be my deer,
"Feed where thou wilt, on mountain, or in dale.
"Graze on my lips; and if those hills be dry,
"Stray lower, where the pleasant fountains lie. 234

"Within this limit is relief enough,
"Sweet bottom grass, and high delightful plain,
"Round rising hillocks, brakes obscure and rough,
"To shelter thee from tempest and from rain.
"Then be my deer, since I am such a park,
"No dog shall rouse thee, tho' a thousand bark." 240

At this Adonis smiles, as in disdain,
That in each cheek appears a pretty dimple;
Love made those hollows, if himself were slain,
He might be buried in a tomb so simple:
Foreknowing well if there he came to lie,
Why there love liv'd, and there he could not die. 246

These loving caves, these round enchanted pits,
Open'd their mouths to swallow Venus liking;
Being mad before, how doth she now for wits?
Struck dead at first, what needs a second striking?
Poor Queen of Love, in thine own law forlorn,
To love a cheek, that smiles at thee in scorn. 252

Now which way shall she turn? What shall she say?
 Her words are done, her woes the more increasing:
 The time is spent, her object will away,
 And from her twining arms doth urge releasing:
 "Pity," she cries, "some favour, some remorse!"
 Away he springs, and hasteth to his horse. 258

But, lo! from forth a copps that neighbours by,
 A breeding jennet, lusty, young, and proud,
 Adonis' trampling courser doth espy,
 And forth she rushes, snorts, and neighs aloud:
 The strong-neck'd steed, being ty'd unto a tree,
 Breaketh his reign, and to her strait goes he. 264

Imperiously he leaps, he neighs, he bounds,
 And now his woven girts he breaks asunder;
 The bearing earth, with his hard hoof he wounds,
 Whose hollow womb resounds like heaven's thunder;
 The iron bit he crushes 'tween his teeth,
 Controlling what he was controlled with. 270

His ears up-prick'd, his braided hanging mane
 Upon his compass'd crest now stands an end:
 His nostrils drink the air, and forth again,
 As from a furnace, vapours doth he send:
 His eye, which glisters scornfully like fire,
 Shews his hot courage, and his high desire. 176

Sometimes he trots, as if he told 'the steps,
 With gentle majesty, and modest pride;
 Anon he rears upright, curvets and leaps,
 As who should say, "lo! thus my strength is try'd:
 "And thus I do to captivate the eye
 "Of the fair breeder that is standing by." 282

What reckoneth he his rider's angry stir,
 His flatt'ring *bolla*, or *his stand I say?*
 What cares he now for curb or pricking spur?
 For rich caparison's or trappings gay?
 He sees his love, and nothing else he sees,
 For nothing else with his proud sight agrees. 288

Look when a painter would surpass the life,
 In limning out a well-proportion'd steed,
 His art, with Nature's workmanship at strife,
 As if the dead the living should exceed:
 So did this horse excel a common one
 In shape, in courage, colour, pace, and bone. 294

Round-hoof'd, short-jointed, fetlocks shag and long,
 Broad breast, full eyes, small head, and nostril wide,
 High crest, short ears, strait legs, and passing strong,
 Thin mane, thick tail, broad buttock, tender hide:
 Look what a horse should have, he did not lack,
 Save a proud rider on so proud a back. 300

Sometimes he scuds far off, and there he stares;
 Anon he starts at stirring of a feather.
 To bid the wind abase he now prepares,
 And where he run, or fly, they know not whither.
 For through his mane and tail the high wind sings,
 Fanning the hairs, which heave like feather'd wings.

He looks upon his love, and neighs unto her; 307
 She answers him, as if she knew his mind.
 Being proud, as females are, to see him woo her,
 She puts on outward strangeness, seems unkind,
 Spurns at his love, and scorns the heat he feels,
 Beating his kind embracements with her heels. 312

Then, like a melancholy male content,
 He veils his tail; that like a falling plume
 Cool shadow to his melting buttocks lent:
 He stamps, and bites the poor flies in his fume:
 His love perceiving how he is enrag'd,
 Grew kinder, and his fury was assuag'd. 318

His testy master goes about to take him,
 When lo! the unback'd breeder full of fear,
 Jealous of catching, swiftly doth forsake him,
 With her the horse, and left Adonis there.
 As they were mad, unto the wood they hie them,
 Out-stripping crows, that strive to over-fly them. 324

All swoln with chafing, down Adonis fits,
 Banning his boist'rous and unruly beast.
 And now the happy season once more fits,
 That love-sick love, by pleading may be blest.
 For lovers say, the heart hath treble wrong,
 When it is barr'd the aidance of the tongue. 330

An oven that is stopp'd, or river staid,
 Burneth more hotly, swelleth with more rage:
 So of concealed sorrow may be said;
 Free vent of words love's fire doth assuage:
 But when the heart's attorney once is mute,
 The client breaks, as desperate in his suit. 336

He sees her coming, and begins to glow,
 Even as a dying coal revives with wind;
 And with his bonnet hides his angry brow,
 Looks on the dull earth with disturbed mind;
 Taking no notice, that she is so nigh,
 For all askance he holds her in his eye. 342

O! what a fight it was wistfully to view
 How she came stealing to the wayward boy;
 To note the fighting conflict of her hue,
 How white and red each other did destroy!
 But now her cheek was pale, and by and by,
 It flash'd forth fire, as lightning from the sky. 348

Now was she just before him, as he sat,
 And like a lowly lover, down she kneels;
 With one fair hand she heaveth up his hat,
 Her other tender hand his fair cheeks feels:
 His tender cheeks, receive her soft hand's print,
 As apt, as new-fall'n snow takes any dint. 354

O! what a war of looks was then between them!
 Her eyes petitioners to his eyes suing:
 His eyes saw her eyes, as they had not seen them;
 Her eyes woo'd still, his eyes disdain'd the wooing:
 And all this dumb play had his acts made plain
 With tears, which chorus-like her eyes did rain. 360

Full gently now she takes him by the hand,
A lily prison'd in a jail of snow;
Or ivory in an alabaster hand,
So white a friend ingirts so white a foe!
This beauteous combat, wilful and unwilling,
Shew'd like to silver doves, that sit a billing. 366

Once more the engine of their thoughts began,
"O fairest mover on this mortal round?
"Would thou wert as I am, and I a man,
"My heart all whole as thine, thy heart my wound.
"For one sweet look thy help I would assure thee, 371
"Though nothing but my body's bane would cure thee."
"Give me my hand," saith he, "why dost thou feel it?"
"Give me my heart," saith she, "and thou shalt have it.
"O! give it me, lest thy hard heart do steel it:
"And being steel'd, soft sighs can never grave it:
"Then love's deep groans I never shall regard,
"Because Adonis' heart hath made mine hard." 378

"For shame," he cries, "let go, and let me go,
"My day's delight is past, my horse is gone,
"And 'tis your fault I am bereft him so:
"I pray you hence, and leave me here alone.
"For all my mind, my thought, my busy care,
"Is how to get my palfrey from the mare." 384

Thus she replies: "Thy palfrey, as he should,
"Welcomes the warm approach of sweet desire,
"Affection is a coal, that must be cool'd;
"Else suffer'd, it will set the heart on fire.
"The sea hath bounds, but deep desire hath none;
"Therefore no marvel, though thy horse be gone. 390

"How like a jade he stood, ty'd to a tree,
"Servilely mast'ed with a leathern rein!
"But when he saw his love, his youth's fair fee,
"He held such petty bondage in disdain;
"Throwing the base thong from his bending crest,
"Enfranchising his mouth, his back, his breast. 396

- " Who sees his true love in her naked bed,
 " Teaching the sheets a whiter hue than white,
 " But when his glutton eyes so full hath fed,
 " His other agents aim at like delight?
 " Who is so faint, that dare not be so bold
 " To touch the fire, the weather being cold? 402
- " Let me excuse thy courser, gentle boy,
 " And learn of him, I heartily beseech thee,
 " To take advantage on presented joy;
 " Though I were dumb, yet his proceedings teach thee.
 " O! learn to love, the lesson is but plain,
 " And once made perfect, never lost again." 403
- " I know not love," quoth he, " nor will I know it,
 " Unless it be a boar, and then I chase it;
 " 'Tis much to borrow, and I will not owe it,
 " My love to love, is love but to disgrace it;
 " For I have heard it is a life in death, 413
 " That laughs, and weeps, and all but with a breath.
- " Who wears a garment shapeless and unfinish'd?
 " Who plucks the bud before one leaf put forth?
 " If springing things be any jot diminish'd,
 " They wither in their prime, prove nothing worth.
 " The colt that's back'd and burden'd, being young,
 " Loseth his pride, and never waxeth strong. 420
- " You hurt my hand with wringing. Let us part,
 " And leave this idle theme, this bootless chat;
 " Remove your siege from my unyielding heart,
 " To love's alarms it will not ope the gate. 424
 " Dismiss your vows, your feigned tears, your flatt'ry;
 " For where a heart is hard, they make no batt'ry."
- " What canst thou talk?" quoth she, " hast thou a tongue?
 " O! would thou had'st not, or I had no hearing! 428
 " Thy mermaid's voice hath done me double wrong?
 " I had my load before, now press'd with bearing.
 " Melodious discord, heavenly tune harsh-sounding!
 " Earth's deep sweet music! and heart's deep sore-
 " wounding. 432

" Had I no eyes, but ears, my ears would love
 " That inward beauty, and invisible :
 " Or were I deaf, thou outward parts would move
 " Each part in me, that were but sensible.
 " Though neither eyes nor ears, to hear nor see,
 " Yet should I be in love, by touching thee. 438

" Say, that the sense of feeling were bereft me,
 " And that I could not see, nor hear, nor touch :
 " And nothing but the very smell were left me,
 " Yet would my love to thee be still as much : 442
 " For from the still'tory of thy face excelling [ing.
 " Comes breath perfum'd, that breedeth love by smell-

" But oh ! what banquet wert thou to the taste,
 " Being nurse and feeder of the other four !
 " Would they not wish the feast should ever last,
 " And bid suspicion double-lock the door ?
 " Left Jealousy, that sour unwelcome guest,
 " Should by his stealing in, disturb the feast." 450

Once more the ruby-colour'd portal open'd,
 Which to his speech did honey passage yield ;
 Like a red morn, that ever yet betoken'd
 Wreck to the seaman, tempest to the field.
 Sorrow to shepherds, woe unto the birds,
 Gust and foul flaws to herdmen, and to herds. 456

This ill presage advisedly she marketh,
 E'en as the wind is hush'd before it raineth,
 Or as the wolf doth grin before he barketh,
 Or as the berry breaks before it staineth ;
 Or like the deadly bullet of a gun,
 His meaning struck her, e'er his words begun. 462

And at his look she flatly falleth down ;
 For looks kill love, and love by looks reviveth :
 A smile recures the wounding of a frown,
 But blessed bankrupt, that by love so thriveth !
 The silly boy believing she is dead,
 Claps her pale cheek, till clapping makes it red. 468

And in amaze break off his late intent;
 For sharply he did think to reprehend her,
 Which cunning Love did wittily prevent;
 Fair fall the wit, that can so well defend her :
 For on the grafs she lies, as she were slain,
 Till his breath breatheth life in her again.

474

He wrings her nose, he strikes her on the cheeks,
 He bends her fingers, holds her pulses hard.
 He chafes her lips, a thousand ways he seeks
 To mend the hurt, that his unkindness marr'd ;
 He kisses her, and she, by her good will,
 Would never rise, so would he kiss her still.

480

The night of sorrow now is turn'd to day,
 Her two blue windows faintly she up-heaveth ;
 Like the fair sun, when in his fresh array
 He cheers the morn, and all the world relieveth :
 And as the bright sun glorifies the sky,
 So is her face illumin'd with her eye.

486

Whose beams upon his hairless face are fixt,
 As if from thence they borrow'd all their shine :
 Were never four such lamps together mix'd,
 Had not his clouded with his brows repine,
 But hers, which thro' the crystal tears gave light,
 Shone like the moon in water, seen by night.

492

" O ! where am I ! " quoth she, " in earth or heaven !
 " Or in the ocean drench'd ! or in the fire !
 " What hour is this ? or morn, or weary even ?
 " Do I delight to die ? or life desire ?
 " But now I liv'd, and Life was Death's annoy :
 " But now I dy'd, and death was lively joy.

498

" O ! thou didst kill me, kill me once again :
 " Thy eyes, shrewd tutor, that hard heart of thine
 " Hath taught them scornful tricks, and such disdain,
 " That they have murder'd this poor heart of mine :
 " And these mine eyes, true leaders to their queen,
 " But for thy piteous lips no more had seen.

504

" Long may they kiss each other for this cure !
 " O never let their crimson liveries wear !
 " And as they last, their verdure still endure,
 " To drive infection from the dangerous year !
 " That the star-gazers having written on death,
 " May say, the Plague is banish'd by thy breath. 510

" Pure lips ! sweet seals ! in my soft lips imprinted,
 " What bargains may I make still to be sealing ?
 " To sell myself, I can be well contented,
 " So thou wilt buy, and pay, and use good dealing :
 " Which purchase if thou make, for fear of slips,
 " Set thy seal manual on my wax-red lips. 516

" A thousand kisses buys my heart from me,
 " And pay them at thy leisure one by one.
 " What is ten hundred kisses unto thee ?
 " Are they not quickly told, and quickly gone ?
 " Say for non-payment that the debt should double,
 " Is twenty hundred kisses such a trouble ?" 522

" Fair queen," quoth he, " if any love you owe me,
 " Measure my strangeness with my unripe years,
 " Before I know myself, seek not to know me.
 " No fisher but the ungrown fry forbears ;
 " The mellow plum doth fall, the green sticks fast,
 " Or being early pluck'd, is sour to taste. 528

" Look, the world's comforter with weary gait,
 " His day's hot task hath ended in the west !
 " The owl (night herald) shrieks, 'tis very late,
 " The sheep are gone to fold, birds to their nest :
 " The cole-black clouds, that shadow heaven's light,
 " Do summon us to part, and bid good night. 534

" Now let me say good night, and so say you :
 " If you will say so, you shall have a kiss."
 " Good night," quoth she, and e'er he says adieu,
 The honey fee of parting tendred is.
 Her arms to lend his neck a sweet embrace,
 Incorporate then they seem, face grows to face. 540

Till breathless he disjoin'd, and backward drew
 The heavenly moisture, that sweet coral mouth,
 Whose precious taste her thirsty lips well knew,
 Whereon they surfeit, yet complain on drowth:
 He with her plenty press'd, she faint with dearth,
 Their lips together glu'd, fall to the earth. 546

Now quick desire hath caught her yielding prey,
 And glutton-like she feeds, yet never filleth;
 Her lips are conquerors, his lips obey,
 Paying what ransom the insulter willet;:
 Whose vulture thought doth pitch the prize so high,
 That she will draw his lips rich treasure dry. 552

And having felt the sweetness of the spoil,
 With blind-fold fury she begins to forage;
 Her face doth reek and smoke, her blood doth boil,
 And careless lust stirs up a desperate courage:
 Planting oblivion, beating reason back;
 Forgetting shame's pure blush, and honour's wrack. 557

Hot, faint, and weary with her hard embracing,
 Like a wild bird being tam'd with too much handling,
 Or as the fleet-foot roe, that's tir'd with chasing,
 Or like the froward infant still'd with dandling;
 He now obeys, and now no more resisteth,
 While she takes all she can, not all she listeth. 564

What wax so frozen, but dissolves with temp'ring
 And yields at last to every light impression?
 Things out of hope are compact oft with vent'ring,
 Affection faints not, like a pale-fac'd coward, 568
 But then who's best, when most his choice is froward.

When he did frown, O had she then gave over!
 Such Nectar from his lips she had not suck'd:
 Foul words and frowns must not repel a lover,
 What though the rose have pricks; yet it is pluck'd.
 Were beauty under twenty locks kept fast,
 Yet love breaks thro', and picks them all at last. 576

For pity now she can no more detain him ;
 The poor fool prays her, that he may depart.
 She is resolv'd no longer to restrain him ;
 Bids him farewell, and look well to her heart,
 The which by Cupid's bow she doth protest,
 He carries thence incaged in his breast. 582

" Sweet boy," she says, " this night I'll waste in for-
 " row,

" For my sick heart commands mine eyes to watch.

" Tell me, love's master, shall we meet to-morrow ?

" Say, shall we, shall we, wilt thou make the match ?"

He tells her no, to-morrow he intends

To hunt the boar with certain of his friends. 588

" The boar," quoth she, whereat a sudden pale,
 Like lawn being spread upon the blushing rose,
 Usurps her cheeks, she trembles at his tale,
 And on his neck her yoking arms she throws,
 She sinketh down still hanging on his neck,
 He on her belly falls, she on her back. 594

Now is she in the very lifts of love,
 Her champion mounted for the hot encounter.
 All is imagery, she doth prove,
 He will not manage her although he mount her :
 The worse than Tantalus is her annoy,
 To clip Elysium, and to lack her Joy. 600

E'en as poor birds deceiv'd with painted grapes,
 Do surfeit by the eye, and pine the maw ;
 E'en so she languisheth in her mishaps,
 As those poor birds, that helpless berries saw,
 The warm effects which she in him finds missing,
 She seeks to kindle with continual kissing. 606

But all in vain, good queen, it will not be,
 She hath assay'd, as much as may be prov'd,
 Her pleading hath deserv'd a greater fee,
 She's love, she loves, and yet she is not lov'd !
 " Fie, fie," he says, " you crush me, let me go,
 " You have no reason to with-hold me so." 612

"Thou hadst gone," quoth she, "sweet boy, e'er this,
 "But that thou told'st me thou would'st hunt the boar.
 "O! be advised, thou know'st not what it is,
 "With javelin's point a churlish swine to gore,
 "Whose tusches never sheath'd, he witteth still,
 "Like to a mortal butcher, bent to kill. 618

"On his bow-back he hath a battle set
 "Of bristly pikes, that ever threat his foes;
 "His eyes, like glow-worms, shine when he doth fret,
 "His snout digs sepulchres where'er it goes;
 "Being mov'd, he strikes whate'er is in his way,
 "And whom he strikes, his crooked tusches slay. 624

"His brawny side with hairy bristles arm'd,
 "Are better proof, than thy spears point can enter;
 "His short thick neck cannot be easily harm'd,
 "Being ireful, on the lion he will venture.
 "The thorny brambles and embracing bushes,
 "As fearful of him part, through whom he rushes. 630

"Alas! he nought esteems that face of thine,
 "To which love's eye pays tributary gazes:
 "Nor thy soft hand, sweet lips, and crystal eyne,
 "Whose full perfection all the world amazes;
 "But having thee at vantage (wondrous dread!)
 "Would root these beauties, as he roots the mead. 636

"O! let him keep his loathsome cabin still!
 "Beauty hath nought to do with such foul fiends.
 "Come not within his danger by thy will,
 "They, that thrive well, take counsel of their friends.
 "When thou didst name the boar, not to dissemble,
 "I fear'd thy fortune, and my joints did tremble. 642

"Didst thou not mark my face? was it not white?
 "Saw'st thou not the signs of fear lurk in mine eye?
 "Grew I not faint? and fell I not downright?
 "Within my bosom, whereon thou dost lie,
 "My boding heart pants, beats, and takes no rest,
 "But like an earthquake shakes thee on my breast. 648



VENUS AND ADONIS.

Then hadst thou gone, quoth the sweet Boy ere this.
 But that thou told'st me thou wouldst hunt the bear.
 O! he is shrewd that knoweth not what he is.
 With jessies point a threadbare feline to goe.

This Page to love fit.

Printed by E. Kirk.

Engraved for C. Cooke, April 14. 1797.

Engraved by C. Warren.



" For where love reigns, disturbing jealousy
 " Doth call himself affection's centinel;
 " Give false alarms, suggesteth mutiny,
 " And in a peaceful hour doth cry kill, kill.
 " Distemp'ring gentle love with his desire,
 " As air and water doth abate the fire.

654

" This four informer, this bate-breeding spy,
 " This canker, that eats up love's tender spring,
 " This carry-tale, dissentious jealousy,
 " That sometimes true news, sometimes false doth bring,
 " Knocks at my heart, and whispers in mine ear,
 " That if I love thee, I thy death should fear.

660

" And more than so, presenteth to mine eye
 " The picture of an angry chafing boar,
 " Under whose sharp fangs, on his back doth lie
 " An image like thyself, all stain'd with gore;
 " Whose blood upon the fresh flowers being shed,
 " Doth make 'em drop with grief, and hang the head.

665

" What should I do? seeing thee so indeed?
 " That trembling at th' imagination,
 " The thought of it doth make my faint heart bleed,
 " And fear doth teach it divination.
 " I prophesy thy death, my living sorrow,
 " If thou encounter with the boar to-morrow.

672

" But if thou needs will hunt, be rul'd by me,
 " Uncouple at the timorous flying hare;
 " Or at the fox, which lives by subtilty;
 " Or at the roe, which no encounter dare,
 " Pursue these fearful creatures o'er the downs,
 " And on thy well-breath'd horse keep with thy
 " hounds.

678

" And when thou hast on foot the purblind hare,
 " Mark the poor wretch, to overshut his troubles,
 " How he outruns the wind, and with what care
 " He cranks and crosses with a thousand doubles.
 " The many musits through the which he goes,
 " Are like a labyrinth t'amaze his foes.

684

- " Sometime he runs among the flocks of sheep;
 " To make the cunning hounds mistake their smell;
 " And sometime, where earth-delving conies keep,
 " To stop the loud pursuers in their yell;
 " And sometime sorteth with a herd of deer:
 " Danger deviseth shifts, wit waits on fear. 690
- " For there his smell with others being mingled,
 " The hot-scent-snuffing hounds are driven to doubt,
 " Ceasing their clamorous city, till they have singled,
 " With much ado, the cold fault cleanly out:
 " Then do they spend their mouths; echo replies,
 " As if another chase were in the skies. 696
- " By this poor Watt far off, upon a hill,
 " Stands on his hinder legs with list'ning ear,
 " To hearken if his foes pursue him still;
 " Anon their loud alarums he doth hear;
 " And now his grief may be compared well
 " To one sore sick, that hears the passing bell. 702
- " Then shalt thou see the dew-bedabbled wretch
 " Turn and return, indenting with the way.
 " Each envious brier his weary legs doth scratch,
 " Each shadow makes him stop, each murmur stay.
 " For misery is trodden on by many;
 " And being low, never reliev'd by any. 708
- " Lie quietly and hear a little more,
 " Nay, do not struggle, for thou shalt not rise:
 " To make thee hate the hunting of the boar,
 " Unlike myself thou hear'st me moralize,
 " Applying this to that, and so to so;
 " For love can comment upon every woe. 714
- " Where did I leave?" " No matter where," quoth he.
 " Leave me, and then the story aptly ends:
 " The night is spent." " Why, what of that?" quoth
 she,
 " I am," quoth he, " expected of my friends.
 " And now 'tis dark, and going I shall fall,
 " In night," quoth she, " Desire sees best of all. 720

" But if thou fall, Oh, then imagine this,
 " The earth in love with thee thy footing trips,
 " And all is but to rob thee of a kiss,
 " Rich preys make rich men thieves, so do thy lips
 " Make modest Dian scornful and forlorn,
 " Lest she should steal a kiss, and die forsworn. 826

" Now of this dark night I perceive the reason,
 " Cynthia for shame obscures her silver shine,
 " Till forging Nature is condemned of treason,
 " For stealing moulds from heaven, that were divine,
 " Wherein she fram'd thee high in heaven's despite,
 " To shame the Sun by day, and her by night. 732

" And therefore hath she brib'd the Destinies
 " To cross the curious workmanship of Nature;
 " To mingle beauty with infirmities,
 " And pure perfection with impure defeature;
 " Making it subject to the tyranny
 " Of sad mischances, and much misery. 738

" As burning fever, agues pale and faint,
 " Life-poisoning pestilence, and frenzies wood,
 " The marrow-eating sickness, whose attain
 " Disorder breeds by heating of the blood:
 " Surfeits, imposthumes, grief, and damn'd despair,
 " Swear Nature's death for framing thee so fair. 744

" And not the least of all these maladies,
 " But in one minute's fight brings beauty under:
 " Both favour, favour, hue and qualities,
 " Whereat the imperial gazer late did wonder,
 " Are on a sudden wasted, thaw'd, and done,
 " As mountain-snow melts with the mid-day sun. 750

" Therefore, despite of fruitless chastity,
 " Love-lacking vestals, and self-loving nuns,
 " That on the earth would breed a scarcity,
 " And barren dearth of daughters and of sons,
 " Be prodigal. The lamp that burns by night,
 " Dries up his oil, to lend the world his light. 756

" What is thy body but a swallowing grave,
 " Seeming to bury that posterity,
 " Which by the rights of Time thou needs must have,
 " If thou destroy them not in their obscurity?
 " If so, the world will hold thee in disdain,
 " Sith in thy pride so fair a hope is slain. 762

" So in thyself, thyself art made away,
 " A mischief worse than civil home-bred strife,
 " Or theirs, whose desperate hands themselves do slay,
 " Or butcher-fire, that raves his son of life.
 " Foul-cankering rust the hidden treasure frets;
 " But gold, that's put to use, more gold begets. 763

" Now then," quoth Adon, " you will fall again
 " Into your idle over-handled theme;
 " The kifs I gave you is bestow'd in vain,
 " And all in vain you strive against the stream.
 " For by this black-fac'd night, Desire's foul nurse,
 " Your treatise makes me like you worse and worse. 764

" If Love hath lent you twenty thousand tongues, 775
 " And every tongue more moving than your own,
 " Bewitching like the wanton mermaids songs,
 " Yet from mine ear the tempting tune is blown.
 " For know, my heart stands armed in my ear,
 " And will not let a false sound enter there: 780

" Lest the deceiving harmony should run
 " Into the quiet closure of my breast;
 " And then my little heart were quite undone,
 " In his bed-chamber to be barr'd of rest.
 " No, lady, no, my heart longs not to groan,
 " But soundly sleeps, while now it sleeps alone. 786

" What have you urg'd, that I cannot reprove?
 " The path is smooth that leadeth unto danger.
 " I hate not love, but your device in love,
 " That lends embracements unto every stranger.
 " You do it for increase. O strange excuse!
 " When Reason is the bawd to Lust's abuse. 792

" Call it not love, for love to heaven is fled,
 " Since sweating Lust on each usurps his name;
 " Under whose simple semblance he hath fed
 " Upon fresh beauty; blotting it with blame:
 " Which the hot tyrant stains, and soon bereaves,
 " As caterpillars do the tender leaves. 798

" Love comforteth like sun-shine after rain;
 " But Lust's effect is tempest after sun:
 " Love's gentle spring doth always fresh remain;
 " Lust's winter comes, e'er summer half be done.
 " Love surfeits not; Lust like a glutton dies:
 " Love is all truth; Lust full of forged lies. 804

" More I could tell, but more I dare not say:
 " The text is old, the orator too green:
 " Therefore in sadness now I will away,
 " My face is full of shame, my heart of teen:
 " Mine ears that to your wanton talk attended,
 " Do burn themselves for having so offended." 810

With this he breaketh from the sweet embrace
 Of those fair arms which bound him to her breast,
 And homeward thro' the dark lawns run apace,
 Leaves Love upon her back deeply distress'd.
 Look how a bright star shooteth from the sky,
 So glides he in the night from Venus' eye. 816

Which after him she darts, as one on shore
 Gazing upon a late embarked friend,
 Till the wild waves will have him seen no more,
 Whose ridges with the meeting clouds contend:
 So did the merciless and pitchy night,
 Fold in the object, that did feed her sight. 822

Whereat amaz'd, as one that unaware
 Hath dropt a precious jewel in the flood;
 Or stonish'd, as night wanderers often are,
 Their light blown out in some mistrustful wood:
 Even so confounded in the dark she lay,
 Having lost the fair discovery of her way. 828

And now she beats her heart, whereat it groans,
 That all the neighbour caves, as seeming troubled,
 Make verbal repetition of her moans :
 Passion on passion deeply is redoubled. [Woe!"]
 "Aye me!" she cries, and twenty times, "Woe!
 And twenty echo's twenty times cry so. 834

She marking them, begins a wailing note
 And sings extemp'rally a woeful ditty :
 How Love makes young men thrall, and old men dote :
 How love is wise in folly, foolish witty :
 Her heavy anthem still concludes in woe!
 And still the choir of echo's answer so. 840

Her song was tedious and out-wore the night,
 For lovers hours are long tho' seeming short :
 If pleas'd themselves, others they think delight
 In such-like circumstance, with such-like sport.
 Their copious stories oftentimes begun,
 End without audience, and are never done. 846

For who hath she to spend the night withal,
 But idle sounds, resembling parasites?
 Like shrill tongu'd tapsters answering every call,
 Soothing the humour of fantastic wits.
 She said, "'tis so:" They answer all, "'tis so,"
 And would say after her if she said no. 852

Lo! hear the gentle lark, weary of rest,
 From his moist cabinet mounts up on high,
 And wakes the morning, from whose silver breast
 The sun ariseth in his majesty :
 Who doth the world so gloriously behold,
 The cedar tops and hills seem burnish'd gold. 858

Venus salutes him with this fair good-morrow :
 "O! thou clear god, and patron of all light !
 "From whom each lamp, and shining star doth borrow,
 "The beauteous influence, that makes him bright :
 "There lives a son that suck'd an earthly mother,
 "May lend thee light, as thou dost lend to other." 864

This said, she hasted to a myrtle grove,
 Musing the morning is so much o'erworn;
 And yet she hears no tidings of her love:
 She hearkens for his hounds, and for his horn,
 Anon she hears them chaunt it lustily,
 And all in haste she coasteth to the cry.

870

And as she runs, the bushes in the way,
 Some caught her by the neck, some kiss her face,
 Some twine about her thigh to make her stay;
 She wildly breaketh from their strict embrace,
 Like a milch doe, whose swelling dugs do ake,
 Hasting to feed her fawn, hid in some brake.

876

By this, she hears the hounds are at a bay,
 Whereat she starts, like one that spies an adder,
 Wreath'd up in fatal folds, just in his way,
 The fear whereof doth make him shake and shudder:
 E'en so the timorous yelping of the hounds,
 Appals her senses, and her sp'rit confounds.

882

For now she knows it is no gentle chase,
 But the blunt boar, rough bear, or lion proud;
 Because the cry remaineth in one place,
 Where fearfully the dogs exclaim aloud:
 Finding their enemy to be so curst,
 They all strain curt'sy, who shall cope him first.

888

The dismal cry rings sadly in her ear,
 Through which it enters to surprise her heart;
 Who overcome by doubt and bloodless fear,
 With cold pale weakness numbs each feeling part:
 Like soldiers, when their captain once doth yield,
 They basely fly, and dare not stay the field.

894

Thus stands she in a trembling ecstasy,
 Till cheering up her senses sore dismay'd,
 She tells them 'tis a causeless fantasy:
 And childish error, that they are afraid;
 Bids them leave quaking, wills them fear no more:
 And with that word, she spy'd the hunted boar.

900

Whose frothy mouth bepainted all with red,
 Like milk and blood being mingled both together,
 A second fear through all her sinews spread,
 Which madly hurries her she knows not whither.
 This way she runs, and now she will no further,
 But back retires, to rate the boar for murder. 906

A thousand spleens bear her a thousand ways,
 She treads the paths that she untreads again ;
 Her more than haste is marred with delays :
 Like the proceedings of a drunken brain,
 Full of respect, yet not at all respecting ;
 In hand with all things, nought at all effecting. 912

Here kennel'd in a brake she finds a hound,
 And asks the weary caitiff for his master ;
 And there another licking of his wound,
 'Gainst venom'd sores the only sovereign plaister.
 And here she meets another sadly scowling,
 To whom she speaks, and he replies with howling. 918

When he had ceas'd his ill-resounding noise,
 Another flap-mouth'd mourner, black and grim,
 Against the welkin vollies out his voice ;
 Another, and another, answers him,
 Clapping their proud tails to the ground below,
 Shaking their scratcht ears, bleeding as they go. 924

Look ! how the world's poor people are amaz'd
 At apparitions, signs, and prodigies ;
 Whereon with fearful eyes they long have gaz'd,
 Infusing them with dreadful prophecies :
 So she, at these sad signs, draws up her breath,
 And sighing it again, exclaims on death. 930

“ Hard-favour'd tyrant, ugly, meagre, lean,
 “ Hateful divorce of love,” thus chides she death,
 “ Grim-grinning ghost, earth's worm, what dost thou
 “ mean ?

“ To stifle beauty, and to steal his breath ?
 “ Who when he liv'd, his breath and beauty set
 “ Gloss on the rose, smell to the violet. 936

" If he be dead, O no ! it cannot be
 " Seeing his beauty, thou should'st strike at it.
 " O ! yes, it may ; thou hast no eyes to see,
 " But hatefully at random dost thou hit.
 " Thy mark is feeble age ; but thy false dart
 " Mistakes that aim, and cleaves an infant's heart. 942
 " Had'st thou but been aware, then he had spoke,
 " And hearing him, thy power had lost his power.
 " The destinies will curse thee for this stroke,
 " They bid thee crop a weed, thou pluck'st a flower :
 " Love's golden arrow at him should have fled,
 " And not death's ebon-dart, to strike him dead. 948
 " Dost thou drink tears, that thou provok'st such weep-
 " What may a heavy groan advantage thee ? [ing?
 " Why hast thou cast into eternal sleeping
 " Those eyes, that taught all other eyes to see ?
 " Now nature cares not for thy mortal vigour,
 " Since her best work is ruin'd with thy rigour." 954

Here, overcome, as one full of despair,
 She veil'd her eye-lids, which like sluices stopt
 The crystal tide, that from her two cheeks fair
 In the sweet channel of her bosom drop'd.
 But thro' the flood-gates breaks the silver rain,
 And with his strong course opens them again. 960

O ! how her eyes and tears did lend and borrow !
 Her eyes seen in her tears, tears in her eye ;
 Both crystals, where they view'd each other's sorrow :
 Sorrow, that friendly sighs fought still to dry.
 But, like a stormy day, now wind, now rain,
 Sighs dry her cheeks, tears make them wet again. 966

Variable passions throng her constant woe,
 As striving which should best become her grief :
 All entertain'd, each passion labours so,
 That every present sorrow seemeth chief.
 But none is best, then join they altogether,
 Like many clouds consulting for foul weather. 972

By this, far off she hears some huntsman hollow ;
 A nurse's song ne'er pleas'd her babe so well.
 The dire imagination she did follow,
 This sound of hope doth labour to expel :
 For now reviving Joy bids her rejoice,
 And flatters her it is Adonis' voice. 978

Whereat her tears began to turn their tide,
 Being prison'd in her eye, like pearls in glass :
 Yet sometimes falls an orient drop beside,
 Which her cheek melts, as scorning it should pass,
 To wash the foul face of the fluttish ground,
 Who is but drunken, when she seemeth drown'd. 984

O hard-believing love ! how strange it seems
 Not to believe, and yet too credulous !
 Thy weal and woe are both of them extremes,
 Despair and hope make thee ridiculous !
 The one doth flatter thee, in thoughts unlikely, 989
 With likely thoughts, the other kills thee quickly.

Now she unweaves the web that she had wrought,
 Adonis lives, and death is not to blame :
 It was not she that call'd him all to nought,
 Now she adds honour to his hateful name :
 She 'cleeps him king of graves, and grave for kings,
 Imperial supreme of all mortal things. 996

" No, no," quoth she, " sweet death ! I did but jest ;
 " Yet pardon me, I felt a kind of fear,
 " When as I met the boar, that bloody beast,
 " Which knows no pity, but is still severe.
 " Then, gentle shadow ! (truth I must confess)
 " I rail'd on thee, fearing my love's decease. 1002

" 'Tis not my fault : the boar provok'd my tongue :
 " Be wreak'd on him (invisible commander !)
 " 'Tis he, foul creature, that hath done thee wrong,
 " I did but act, he's author of thy slander.
 " Grief hath two tongues, and never woman yet
 " Could rule them both without ten women's wit."

Thus hoping that Adonis is alive,
 Her rash suspect she doth extenuate;
 And that his beauty may the better thrive,
 With death she humbly doth insinuate:
 Tells him of trophies, statues, tombs, and stories,
 His victories, his triumphs, and his glories. 1009 1014

"O Jove," quoth she, "how much a fool was I,
 "To be of such a weak and silly mind?
 "To wail his death, who lives, and must not die,
 "Till mutual overthrow of mortal kind!
 "For he being dead, with him is beauty slain,
 "And beauty dead, black chaos comes again. 1020

"Fie! fie! fond love, thou art so full of fear,
 "As one with treasure laden, hem'd with thieves:
 "Trifles (unwitnessed with eye or ear)
 "Thy coward heart, with false bethinking grieves."
 Even at this word she hears a merry horn,
 Whereat she leaps, that was but late forlorn. 1026

As falcon to the lure, away she flies:
 The grass stoops not, she treads on it so light,
 And in her haste unfortunately spies
 The foul boar's conquest on her fair delight.
 Which seen, her eyes, as murder'd with the view,
 Like stars ashamed of day, themselves withdrew. 1032

Or as the snail, whose tender horns being hit,
 Shrinks back into his shelly cave with pain,
 And there, all smother'd up, in shade doth sit,
 Long after fearing to creep forth again:
 So at his bloody view her eyes are fled,
 Into the deep dark cabins of her head. 1038

Where they resign'd their office and their light
 To the disposing of her troubled brain:
 Who bids them still consort with ugly night,
 And never wound the heart with looks again:
 Who, like a king perplexed in his throne,
 By their suggestions gives a deadly groan.

Whereat each tributary subject quakes,
 As when the wind imprison'd in the ground,
 Struggling for passage, earth's foundation shakes,
 Which with cold terrors doth men's mind confound,
 This mutiny each part doth so surprise, 1049
 That from their dark beds once more leap her eyes.

And, being open thro' unwilling fight
 Upon the wide wound, that the boar had trench'd
 In his soft flank, whose wonted lily white
 With purple tears, that his wound wept, was drench'd.
 No flower was nigh, no grass, herb, leaf, or weed,
 But stole his blood, and seem'd with him to bleed.

This solemn sympathy poor Venus noteth, 1057
 Over one shoulder doth she hang her head ;
 Dumbly she passions, frantickly she doteth ;
 She thinks he could not die, he is not dead.
 Her voice is stopp'd, her joints forget to bow,
 Her eyes are mad that they have wept till now. 1062

Upon his hurt she looks so stedfastly,
 That her sight dazzling, makes the wound seem three ;
 And then she reprehends her mangling eye,
 That makes more gashes where no breach should be :
 His face seems twain, each several limb is-doubled,
 For oft the eye mistakes, the brain being troubled. 1068

" My tongue cannot express my grief for one ;
 " And yet," quoth she, " behold the two Adons dead !
 " My sighs are blown away, my salt tears gone,
 " Mine eyes are turn'd to fire, my heart to lead :
 " Heavy heart's lead melt at mine eyes as fire,
 " So shall I die by drops of hot desire. 1074

" Alas ! poor World, what treasure hast thou lost !
 " What face remains alive that's worth the viewing ?
 " Whose tongue is music now ? what canst thou boast
 " Of things long since, or any thing ensuing ?
 " The flowers are sweet, their colours fresh and trim,
 " But true sweet Beauty liv'd, and dy'd in him. 1080



DEATH OF ADONIS.

This solemn sympathy poor Venus noteth,
Over one shoulder doth she hang her head;
Dumbly the passions, frantically she doteth;
She thinks he could not die, he is not dead.

Vide page 70 line 207.



" Bonnet, or veil, henceforth no creature wear ;
 " Nor sun, nor wind will ever strive to kiss you :
 " Having no fair to lose, you need not fear ;
 " The sun doth scorn you, and the wind doth hiss you.
 " But when Adonis liv'd, sun and sharp air
 " Lurk'd, like two thieves, to rob him of his fair. 1086

" And therefore would he put his bonnet on,
 " Under whose brim the gaudy sun would peep ;
 " The wind would blow it off, and being gone,
 " Play with his locks, then would Adonis weep :
 " And strait in pity of his tender years, 1091
 " They both would strive who first should dry his tears.

" To see his face, the lion walk'd along
 " Behind some hedge, because he would not fear him ;
 " To recreate himself, when he hath sung,
 " The tiger would be tame, and gently hear him :
 " If he had spoke, the wolf would leave his prey,
 " And never fright the silly lamb that day. 1098

" When he beheld his shadow in a brook,
 " There fishes spread on it their golden gills :
 " When he was by, the birds such pleasure took,
 " That some would sing, some other in their bills
 " Would bring him mulberries, and ripe red cherries ;
 " He fed them with his sight, they him with berries.

" But this foul, grim, and urchin-snouted boar, 1105
 " Whose downward eye still looketh for a grave,
 " Ne'er saw the beauteous livery that he wore ;
 " Witness the entertainment that he gave.
 " If he did see his face, why then I know,
 " He thought to kiss him, and hath kill'd him so. 1110

" 'Tis true, 'tis true, thus was Adonis slain,
 " He ran upon the boar with his sharp spear,
 " Who would not whet his teeth at him again,
 " But by a kiss thought to persuade him there :
 " And nuzzling in his flank, the loving swine
 " Sheath'd unaware his tusk in his soft groin. 1116

" Had I been tooth'd like him, I must confess,
 " With kissing him, I should have kill'd him first.
 " But he is dead, and never did he bless
 " My mouth with his ; the more am I accurs'd."
 With this she falleth in the place she stood,
 And stains her face with his congealed blood. 1122

She looks upon his lips, and they are pale ;
 She takes him by the hand, and that is cold ;
 She whispers in his ear a heavy tale,
 As if he heard the woeful words she told :
 She lifts the coffer-lids that close his eyes,
 Where, lo ! two lamps, burnt out, in darkness lies. 1123

Two glasses where herself herself beheld
 A thousand times, and now no more reflect ;
 Their virtue lost, wherein they late excell'd,
 And every beauty robb'd of his effect.
 " Wonder of time !" quoth she, " this is my spight,
 " That, you being dead, the day should yet be light.

" Since thou art dead, lo ! here I prophecy, 1133
 " Sorrow, on love, hereafter shall attend ;
 " It shall be waited on with jealousy,
 " Find sweet beginning, but unfavoury end,
 " Ne'er settled equally, too high, or low :
 " That all love's pleasures shall not match his woe.

" It shall be fickle, false, and full of fraud, 1141
 " And shall be blasted in a breathing while,
 " The bottom poison, and the top o'erstraw'd
 " With sweats, that shall the sharpest fight beguile.
 " The strongest body shall it make most weak,
 " Strike the wise dumb, and teach the fool to speak.

" It shall be sparing, and the fool of riot, 1147
 " Teaching decrepid age to tread the measures ;
 " The staring ruffian shall it keep in quiet,
 " Pluck down the rich, enrich the poor with treasures ;
 " It shall be raging mad, and silly mild,
 " Make the young old, the old become a child. 1152

- " It shall suspect, where is no cause of fear; 1153
" It shall not fear, where it should most mistrust;
" It shall be merciful, and too severe,
" And most deceiving when it seems most just:
" Perverse it shall be, when it seems most toward,
" Put fear to valour, courage to the coward. 1158
" It shall be the cause of war and dire events,
" And set dissension 'twixt the son and fire;
" Subject and servile to all discontents,
" As dry combustible matter is to fire.
" Sith in his prime, death doth my love destroy,
" They that love best, their love shall not enjoy. 1164

By this, the boy that by her side lay kill'd,
Was melted like a vapour from her sight,
And in his blood, that on the ground lay spill'd,
A purple flow'r sprung up, chequer'd with white,
Resembling well his pale cheeks and the blood, 1169
Which in round drops upon their whiteness stood.

She bows her head, the new-sprung flower to smell,
Comparing it to her Adonis' breath:
And says, within her bosom it shall dwell,
Since he himself is rest from her by death:
She crops the stalk, and in the breach appears
Green dropping sap, which she compares to tears. 1176

- " Poor flow'r!" quoth she, " this was thy father's guise,
" (Sweet issue of a more sweet-smelling fire)
" For every little grief to wet his eyes,
" To grow unto himself was his desire,
" And so 'tis thine; but know it is as good
" To wither in my breast, as in his blood. 1182

- " Here was thy father's bed, here is my breast,
" Thou art the next of blood, and 'tis thy right;
" Lo, in this hollow cradle take thy rest,
" My throbbing heart shall rock thee day and night:
" There shall not be one minute of an hour, 1187
" Wherein I will not kiss my sweet love's flow'r.

Thus weary of the world, away she hies,
And yokes her silver doves, by whose swift aid,
Their mistress mounted, through the empty skies,
In her light chariot quickly is convey'd:
Holding their course to Paphos, where their queen
Means to immure herself, and not be seen.

1194



DEDICATION.

THE RAPE OF LUCRECE.

TO THE RIGHT HON.

HENRY WRIOTHESLY,

Earl of Southampton, and Baron Tichfield.

RIGHT HONOURABLE,

THE love I dedicate to your Lordship, is without end: whereof this pamphlet, without beginning, is but a superfluous moiety. The warrant I have of your honourable disposition, not the worth of my untutored lines, makes it assured of acceptance. What I have done is yours, what I have to do is yours, being part in all I have devoted yours. Were my worth greater, my duty should shew greater: mean time, as it is, it is bound to your Lordship: to whom I wish long life, still lengthened with all happiness.

Your Lordship's in all duty,

W. SHAKSPEARE.



THE RAPE OF LUCRECE.

The Argument.

LUCIUS TARQUINIUS (for his excessive pride surnamed Superbus) after he had caused his own father-in-law, Servius Tullius to be cruelly murdered, and contrary to the Roman laws and customs, not requiring or staying for the people's suffrages, had possessed himself of the kingdom, went, accompanied with his sons, and other noblemen of Rome, to besiege Ardea. During which siege, the principal men of the army, meeting one evening at the tent of Sextus Tarquinius, the king's son, in their discourses after supper, every one commended the virtues of his own wife; among whom Collatinus extolled the incomparable chastity of his wife Lucrece. In that pleasant humour they all posited to Rome; and intending, by their secret and sudden arrival, to make trial of that which every one had before avouched, only Collatinus finds his wife (though it were late in the night) spinning amongst her maids, the other ladies were found all dancing and revelling, or in several disorders. Whereupon the noblemen yielded Collatinus the victory, and his wife the fame. At that time, Sextus Tarquinius being inflamed with Lucrece's beauty, yet smothering his passions for the present, departed with the rest back to the camp; from whence he shortly after privily withdrew himself, and was (according to his state) royally entertained and lodged by Lucrece at Collatium. The same night, he treacherously stealeth into her chamber, violently ravished her, and early in the morning speedeth away. Lucrece, in this lamentable plight, hastily dispatcheth messengers, one to Rome for her father, another to the camp for Collatine. They came, the one accompanied with Junius Brutus, the other with Publius Valerius; and finding Lucrece attired in mourning habit, demanded the cause of her sorrow. She first taking an oath of them for her revenge, revealed the actor, and whole manner of his dealing, and withal suddenly stabbed herself. Which done, with one consent, they all vowed to root out the whole hated family of the Tarquins: And bearing the dead body to Rome, Brutus acquainted the people with the doer, and manner of the vile deed; with a bitter invective against the tyranny of the King; wherewith the people were so moved, that with one consent, and a general acclamation, the Tarquins were all exiled; and the State-government changed from Kings to Consuls.

FROM the besieg'd Arden all in post,
 Born by the trustless wings of false desire,
 Lust-breathing Tarquin leaves the Roman host,
 And to Collatium bears the lightless fire,
 Which in pale embers hid, lurks to aspire,
 And girdle with embracing flames, the waste
 Of Collatine's fair love, Lucrece the chaste.

5

Haply that name of chaste unhaply set,
 This bateless edge on his keen appetite:
 When Collatine unwisely did not let
 To praise the clear unmatched red and white;
 Which triumph'd in that sky of his delight;
 Where mortal star, as bright as heaven's beauties
 With pure aspects did him peculiar duties.

10

For he the night before, in Tarquin's tent,
 Unlock'd the treasure of his happy state:
 What priceless wealth the heavens had him lent,

15

In the possession of his beauteous mate ;
Reckoning his fortune at such high-proud rate,
That kings might be espoused to more fame, 20
But king, nor peer, to such a peerless dame.

O happiness enjoy'd but of a few !
And if possess'd, as soon decay'd and done !
As is the morning's silver melting dew,
Against the golden splendor of the sun : 25
An expir'd date cancell'd e'er well begun.
Honour and beauty in the owner's arms,
Are weakly fortrest from a world of harms.

Beauty itself doth of itself persuade
The eyes of men without an orator ; 30
What needeth then apology be made,
To set forth that which is so singular ?
Or why is Collatine the publisher
Of that rich jewel he should keep unknown
From thievish ears, because it is his own ? 35

Perchance his boast of Lucrece's sovereignty
Suggested this proud issue of a king ;
For by our ears our hearts oft tainted be.
Perchance, that envy of so rich a thing
Braving compare, disdainfully did sting 40
His high-pitch'd thoughts, that meaner men should vant
The golden hap, which their superiors want.

But some untimely thought did instigate
His all too timeless speed, if none of those,
His honour, his affairs, his friends, his state, 45
Neglected all, with swift intent he goes
To quench the coal, which in his liver glows.
O ! rash false heat wrapt in repentance cold !
Thy hasty spring still blasts, and ne'er grows old.

When at Collatium this false lord arriv'd, 50
Well was he welcom'd by the Roman dame,
Within whose face beauty and virtue striv'd,
Which of them both should underprop her fame,
When Virtue bragg'd, Beauty would blush for shame ;

When Beauty boasted blushes, in despight
Virtue would stain that o'er with silver white, 55

But Beauty, in that white intituled,
From Venus doves, doth challenge that fair field;
Then Virtue claims from Beauty beauty's red,
Which Virtue gave the golden age to guild 60
Her silver cheeks, and call'd it then her shield;
Teaching them thus to use it in the fight,
When shame assail'd, the red should fence the white.

This heraldry in Lucrece's face was seen,
Argu'd by Beauty's red and Virtue's white; 65
Of either's colour was the other queen,
Proving from world's minority their right;
Yet their ambition makes them still to fight:
The sov'reignty of either being so great,
That oft they interchange each other's seat. 70

This silent war of lilies and of roses,
Which Tarquin view'd in her fair face's field,
In their pure ranks his traitor eye incloses,
Where, left between them both it should be kill'd,
The coward captive vanquished doth yield 75
To those two armies, that would let him go,
Rather than triumph in so false a foe.

Now thinks he, that her husband's shallow tongue,
The niggard prodigal, that prais'd her so,
In that high task hath done her beauty wrong, 80
Which far exceeds his barren skill to show.
Therefore that praise which Collatine doth owe,
Inchanted Tarquin answers with surmise,
In silent wonder of still gazing eyes.

This earthly saint, adored by this devil, 85
Little suspected the false worshipper;
For thoughts unstain'd do seldom dream of evil,
Birds never lim'd, no secret bushes fear:
So guiltless she securely gives good cheer,
And reverend welcome to her princely guest, 90
Whose inward ill no outward harm exprest.

THE RAPE OF LUCRECE.

85

For that he colour'd with his high estate,
Hiding base sin in pleats of majesty,
That nothing in him seem'd inordinate,
Save sometime too much wonder of his eye : 95
Which having all, all could not satisfy ;
But poorly rich so wanteth in his store,
That cloy'd with much, he pineth still for more.

But she that never cop'd with stranger eyes,
Could pick no meaning from their parling looks, 100
Nor read the subtle shining secrecies
Writ in the glassy margents of such books.
She touch'd no unknown baits, nor fear'd no hooks ;
Nor could she moralize his wanton sight
More than his eyes were open'd to the light. 105

He stories to her ears her husband's fame,
Won in the fields of fruitful Italy ;
And decks with praises Collatine's high name,
Made glorious by his manly chivalry,
With bruised arms and wreaths of victory. 110
Her joy with heav'd up hand she doth express,
And wordless, so greets heaven for his success.

Far from the purpose of his coming thither,
He makes excuses for his being there ;
No cloudy show of stormy blust'ring weather, 115
Doth yet in his fair welkin once appear,
Till sable night, mother of dread and fear,
Upon the world dim darkness doth display,
And in her vaulty prison shuts the day.

For then is Tarquin brought unto his bed, 120
Intending weariness with heavy sprite ;
For after supper long he questioned
With modest Lucrece, and wore out the night,
Now leaden slumber with life's strength doth fight,
And every one to rest themselves betake, 125
Save thieves, and cares, and troubled minds that wake.

As one of which, doth Tarquin lie revolving,
The sundry dangers of his will's obtaining,

Yet ever to obtain his will resolving,
Though weak built hopes persuade him to abstaining;
Despair to gain doth traffic oft for gaining: 131
And when great treasure is the meed propos'd,
Though death be adjunct, there's no death suppos'd.

Those that much covet are of gain so fond,
That what they have not (that which they possess) 135
They scatter and unloose it from their bond,
And so by hoping more they have but leis;
Or gaining more the profit of excess
Is but to surfeit, and such griefs sustain,
That they prove bankrupt in this poor-rich gain. 140

The aim of all is but to nurse the life
With honour, wealth and ease, in waining age:
And in this aim there is such thwarting strife,
That one for all, or all for one we gage: —
As life for honour in fell battles rage, 145
Honour for wealth, and oft that wealth doth cost
The death of all, and altogether lost.

So that in vent'ring all, we leave to be
The things we are for that which we expect:
And this ambitious soul infirmity, 150
In having much, torments us with defect
Of that we have: so then we do neglect
The thing we have, and all for want of wit,
Make something nothing, by augmenting it.

Such hazard now must doting Tarquin make, 155
Pawning his honour to obtain his lust:
And for himself, himself he must forsake;
Then where is truth, if there be no self-trust?
When shall he think to find a stranger just,
When he himself, himself confounds, betrays 160
To stand'rous tongues the wretched hateful lays?

Now stole upon the time the dead of night,
When heavy sleep had clos'd up mortal eyes;
No comfortable star did lend his light,

No noise but owls, and wolves death-boding cries:
 Now serves the season, that they may surprise 166
 The silly lambs; pure thoughts are dead and still,
 While lust and murder wakes, to stain and kill.

And now this lustful lord leapt from his bed,
 Throwing his mantle rudely o'er his arm, 170
 Is madly tofs'd between desire and dread;
 Th' one sweetly flatters, the other feareth harm:
 But honest fear, bewitch'd with lust's foul charms,
 Doth too, too oft betake him to retire,
 Beaten away by brain-sick rude desire. 175

His falchion on a flint he softly smiteth,
 That from the cold stone sparks of fire do fly,
 Whereat a waxen torch forthwith he lighteth,
 Which must be load-star to his lustful eye,
 And to the flame thus speaks advisedly; 180
 "As from this cold flint I enforc'd this fire,
 "So Lucrece must I force to my desire."

Here pale with fear, he doth premeditate
 The dangers of his loathsome enterprise;
 And in his inward mind he doth debate 185
 What following sorrow may on this arise:
 Then looking scornfully, he doth despise
 His naked armour of still slaughter'd lust,
 And justly thus controls his thoughts unjust.

"Fair torch, burn out thy light, and lend it not 190
 "To darken her, whose light excelleth thine:
 "And die unhallow'd thoughts, before you blot
 "With your uncleanness, that which is divine.
 "Offer pure incense to so pure a shrine:
 "Let fair Humanity abhor the deed, 195
 "That spots and stains Love's modest snow-white weed.

"O shame to knighthood, and to shining arms!
 "O foul dishonour to my household's grave!
 "O impious act, including all foul harms
 "A martial man to be soft fancy's slave! 200
 "True valour still a true respect should have.

- " Then my digression is so vile, so base,
 " That it will live engraven in my face.
 " Yea, tho' I die, the scandal will survive,
 " And be an eye-sore in my golden coat : 205
 " Some loathsome dash the herald will contrive,
 " To cypher me how fondly I did dote :
 " That my posterity, sham'd with the note,
 " Shall curse my bones, and hold it for no sin,
 " To wish that I their father had not been. 210
 " What win I, if I gain the thing I seek ?
 " A dream, a breath, a froth of fleeting joy.
 " Who buys a minute's mirth, to wail a week ?
 " Or sells eternity, to get a toy ?
 " For one sweet grape, who will the wine destroy ? 215
 " Or what fond beggar, but to touch the crown,
 " Would with the sceptre strait be stricken down ?
 " If Collatinus dream of my intent,
 " Will he not wake, and in a desperate rage
 " Post hither, this vile purpose to prevent ? 220
 " This siege that hath ingirt his marriage,
 " This blur to youth, this sorrow to the sage,
 " This dying virtue, this surviving shame,
 " Whose crime will bear an ever-during blame.
 " O what excuse can my invention make, 225
 " When thou shalt charge me with so black a deed !
 " Will not my tongue be mute, my frail joints shake ?
 " Mine eyes forego their light, my false heart bleed ?
 " The guilt being great, the fear doth still exceed,
 " And extreme fear can neither fight nor fly, 230
 " But coward-like with trembling terror die.
 " Had Collatinus kill'd my son or fire,
 " Or lain in ambush to betray my life ;
 " Or were he not my dear friend, this desire
 " Might have excuse to work upon his wife, 235
 " As in revenge or quital of such strife ;
 " But as he is my kinsman, my dear friend,
 " The shame and fault finds no excuse, nor end.

THE RAPE OF LUCRECE.

89

- " Shameful it is, if the fact be known ;
 " Hateful it is ; there is no hate in loving. 240
 " I'll beg her love ; but she is not her own :
 " The worst is but denial, and reproving.
 " My will is strong, past reason's weak removing.
 " Who fears a sentence, or an old man's frow,
 " Shall by a painted cloth be kept in awe." 245

Thus (graceless) holds he disputation,
 'Tween frozen conscience and hot-burning will ;
 And with good thoughts makes dispensation,
 Urging the worser sense for vantage still :
 Which in a moment doth confound and kill 250
 All pure effects, and doth so far proceed,
 That what is vile, shews like a virtuous deed.

Quoth he, " she took me kindly by the hand,
 " And gaz'd for tidings in my eager eyes,
 " Fearing some hard news from the warlike band, 255
 " Where her belov'd Collatinus lies,
 " O how her fear did make her colour rise !
 " First, red as roses, that on lawn we lay,
 " Then white as lawn, the roses took away.

" And now her hand in my hand being lock'd, 260
 " Forc'd it to tremble with her loyal fear :
 " Which struck her sad, and then it faster rock'd,
 " Until her husband's welfare she did hear ;
 " Whereat she smiled with so sweet a cheer,
 " That had Narcissus seen her as she stood, 265
 " Self-love had never drown'd him in the flood.

" Why hunt I then for colour or excuses ?
 " All orators are dumb, when beauty pleadeth ;
 " Poor wretches have remorse in poor abuses ;
 " Love thrives not in the heart that shadows dreadeth.
 " Affection is my captain, and he leads ; 271
 " And when his gaudy banner is display'd,
 " The coward fights, and will not be dismay'd.

" Then childish fear avant ! debating die !
 " Respect and reason wait on wrinkled age ! 275

" My heart shall never countermand mine eye,
 " Sad pause, and deep regard beseems the sage ;
 " My part is youth, and beats these from the stage.
 " Desire my pilot is, beauty my prize ;
 " Then who fears sinking where such treasure lies ?"

As corn o'ergrown by weeds, so heedful fear 281
 Is almost choak'd by unresisted lust,
 Away he steals with open list'ning ear,
 Full of foul hope, and full of fond mistrust ;
 Both which, as servitors to the unjust, 285
 So cross him with their opposite persuasion,
 That now he vows a league, and now invasion.

Within his thought her heavenly image sits,
 And in the self-same seat sits Collatine :
 That eye which looks on her, confounds his wit ; 290
 That eye which him beholds, as more divine,
 Unto a view so false will not incline :
 But with a pure appeal seeks to the heart,
 Which, once corrupted, takes the worse part.

And therein heartens up his servile powers, 295
 Who flatter'd by their leaders jocund show,
 Stuff up his lust, as minutes fill up hours ;
 And as their captain so their pride doth grow,
 Paying more slavish tribute than they owe.
 By reprobate desire thus madly led, 300
 The Roman lord marcheth to Lucrece' bed.

The locks between her chamber and his will,
 Each one by him enforc'd, retires his ward ;
 But as they open, they all rate his ill,
 Which drives the creeping thief to some regard : 305
 The threshold grates the door to have him heard ;
 Night-wand'ring weazels shriek to see him there,
 They fright him, yet he still pursues his fear.

As each unwilling portal yields him way,
 Through little vents and crannies of the place, 310
 The wind wars with his torch to make him stay,
 And blows the smoke of it into his face,
 Extinguishing his conduct in this case,

THE RAPE OF LUCRECE.

91

But his hot heart, which fond desire doth scorch
Puffs forth another wind that fires the torch.

315

And being lighted by the light, he spies
Lucrecia's glove, wherein her needle sticks ;
He takes it from the rushes where it lies,
And gripping it, the needle his finger pricks :
As who should say, this glove to wanton tricks 320
Is not inur'd ; return again in haste,
Thou seest our mistress' ornaments are chaste.

But all these poor forbiddings could not stay him,
He in the worst sense construes their denial :
The doors, the wind, the glove that did delay him,
He takes for accidental things of trial, 326
Or as those bars, which stop the hourly dial ;
Who with a ling'ring stay his course doth let,
Till every minute pays the hour his debt.

" So, so," quoth he, " these lets attend the time, 330
" Like little frosts that sometimes threat the spring,
" To add a more rejoicing to the prime,
" And give the sneaped birds more cause to sing,
" Pain pays the income of each precious thing ; [sands,
" Huge rocks, high winds, strong pirates, shelves and
" The merchant fears, e'er rich at home he lands." 336

Now is he come unto the chamber-door,
That shuts him from the heaven of his thought,
Which with a yielding latch, and with no more,
Hath barr'd him from the blessed thing he sought. 340
So from himself impiety hath wrought ;
That for his prey to pray he doth begin,
As if the heavens should countenance his sin.

But in the midst of his unfruitful prayer,
Having solicited th' eternal power, 345
That his foul thoughts might compass his fair fair,
And they would stand auspicious to the hour ;
Even there he starts : quoth he, " I must deslour !
" The powers to whom I pray, abhor this fact,
" How can they then assist me in the act ? 350

" Then love and fortune be my gods, my guide,
 " My will is back'd with resolution ;
 " Thoughts are but dreams till their effects be try'd,
 " The blackest sin is clear'd with absolution ;
 " Against love's fire, fear's frost hath dissolution. 355
 " The eye of heaven is out, and misty night
 " Covers the shame, that follows sweet delight."

This said, the guilty hand pluck'd up the latch,
 And with his knee the door he opens wide ;
 The dove sleeps fast, that this night-owl will catch ;
 Thus treason works e'er traitors be espy'd. 361
 Who sees the lurking serpent, steps aside ;
 But she sound-sleeping, fearing no such thing,
 Lies at the mercy of his mortal sting.

Into the chamber wickedly he stalks, - 365
 And gazeth on her yet unstained bed :
 The curtains being close, about he walks,
 Rolling his greedy eye-balls in his head,
 By their high treason in his heart misled ;
 Which gives the watch-word to his hand full soon,
 To draw the cloud that hides the silver moon. 371

Look as the fair, and fiery-pointed sun,
 Rushing from forth a cloud, bereaves our sight ;
 E'en so, the curtain drawn, his eyes begun
 To wink, being blinded with the greater light : 375
 Whether it is, that she reflects so bright,
 That dazzleth them, or else some shame supposed ;
 But blind they are, and keep themselves inclosed.

O had they in that darksome prison died !
 Then had they seen the period of their ill ; 380
 Then Collatine again by Lucrece' side,
 In his clear bed might have reposed still.
 But they must ope, this blessed league to kill ;
 And holy-thoughted Lucrece, to their sight
 Must sell her joy, her life, her world's delight. 385

Her lily hand her rosy cheek lies under,
 Cozening the pillow of a lawful kiss ;

THE RAPE OF LUCRECE.

93

Who therefore angry, seems to part in sunder,
Swelling on either side to want his blifs :
Between whose hills, her head intomb'd is ; 390
Where like a virtuous monument she lies,
To be admir'd of lewd unhallow'd eyes.

Without the bed her other fair hand was
On the green coverlet, whose perfect white
Shew'd like an April daisy on the grafs, 395
With pearly sweat, resembling dew of night.
Her eyes like marigolds had sheath'd their light;
And canopy'd in darkness sweetly lay,
Till they might open to adorn the day.

Her hair like golden threads play'd with her breath ;
O modest wantons ! wanton modesty ! 401
Shewing life's triumph in the map of death,
And death's dim look in life's mortality.
Each in her sleep themselves so beautify,
As if between them twain there were no strife, 405
But that life liv'd in death, and death in life.

Her breasts like ivory globes circled with blue,
A pair of maiden worlds unconquered,
Save of their lord, no bearing yoke they knew,
And him by oath they truly honoured. 410
These worlds, in Tarquin, new ambition bred,
Who like a foul usurper went about,
From this fair throne to have the owner out.

What could he see, but mightily he noted ?
What did he note, but strongly he desir'd ? 415
What he beheld, on that he firmly doted,
And in his will his wilful eye he tir'd.
With more than admiration he admir'd
Her azure veins, her alabaster skin,
Her coral lips, her snow-white dimpled chin. 420

As the grim lion fawneth o'er his prey,
Sharp hunger by the conquest satisfy'd :
So o'er this sleeping soul doth Tarquin stay,

His rage of lust by gazing qualify'd,
 Slack'd, not suppress'd; for standing by her side, 425
 His eye which late this mutiny restraints,
 Unto a greater uproar tempts his veins.

And they, like straggling slaves for pillage fighting,
 Obdurate vassals, fell exploits effecting,
 In bloody death and ravishment delighting, 430
 Nor children's tears, nor mother's groans respecting,
 Swell in their pride, the onset still expecting.
 Anon his beating heart alarum striking,
 Gives the hot charge, and bids them do their liking.

His drumming heart cheers up his burning eye; 435
 His eye commends the leading to his hand;
 His hand, as proud of such a dignity,
 Smoaking with pride, march'd on to make his stand
 On her bare breasts, the heart of all her land;
 Whose ranks of blue veins, as his hand did scale, 440
 Left their round turrets destitute and pale.

They must ring to the quiet cabinet,
 Where their dear governess and lady lies:
 Do tell her she is dreadfully beset,
 And fright her with confusion of their cries. 445
 She, much amaz'd, breaks ope her lock'd-up eyes:
 Who peeping forth, this tumult to behold,
 Are by his flaming torch dimm'd and controll'd.

Imagine her as one in dead of night,
 From forth dull sleep by dreadful fancy waking, 450
 That thinks she hath beheld some ghastly sprite,
 Whose grim aspect sets every joint a shaking,
 What terror 'tis? but she in worse taking,
 From sleep disturbed, heedfully doth view
 The sight, which makes supposed terror true. 455

Wrapt and confounded in a thousand fears,
 Like to a new-kill'd bird she trembling lies:
 She dares not look, yet winking there appears
 Quick-shifting antics ugly in her eyes,
 Such shadows are the weak brain's forgeries; 460

Who angry that the eyes fly from their lights,
In darkness daunts them with more dreadful fights.

His hand, that yet remains upon her breast,
(Rude ram! to batter such an ivory wall)
May feel her heart (poor citizen!) distressed, 465
Wounding itself to death, rise up, and fall,
Beating her bulk that his hand shakes withal.
This moves in him more rage, and lesser pity,
To make the breach, and enter this sweet city.

First like a trumpet doth his tongue begin 470
To sound a parly to his heartless foe,
Who o'er the white sheet peers her whiter chin,
The reason of this rash alarm to know,
Which he by dumb demeanor seeks to shew;
But she with vehement prayers urgeth still, 475
Under what colour he commits this ill.

Thus he replies: "The colour in thy face,
"That e'en for anger makes the lily pale,
"And the red-rose blush at her own disgrace,
"Shall plead for me, and tell my loving tale. 480
"Under that colour I am come to scale
"Thy never-conquer'd fort, the fault is thine,
"For those thine eyes betray thee unto mine.

"Thus I forestal thee, if thou mean to chide:
"Thy beauty hath ensnar'd thee to this night, 485
"Where thou with patience must my will abide;
"My will, that marks thee for my earth's delight,
"Which I to conquer fought with all my might.
"But as reproof and reason beat it dead,
"By thy bright beauty was it newly bred. 490

"I see what crosses my attempt will bring;
"I know what thorns the growing rose defends;
"I think the honey guarded with a sting.
"All this before-hand counsel comprehends;
"But will is deaf, and hears no heedful friends. 495
"Only he hath an eye to gaze on beauty,
"And dotes on what he looks, 'gainst law or duty.

" I have debated even in my soul,
 " What wrong, what shame, what sorrow I shall breed;
 " But nothing can affection's course control, 500
 " Or stop the headlong fury of his speed.
 " I know repentant tears insue the deed,
 " Repröach, disdain, and deadly enmity;
 " Yet strive I to embrace mine infamy."

This said, he shakes aloft his Roman blade, 505
 Which like a falcon tow'ring in the skies,
 Coucheth the fowl below with his wings shade,
 Whose crooked beak threatens, if he mount, he dies:
 So under the insulting falchion lies
 Harmless Lucrecia, marking what he tells, 510
 With trembling fears, as fowls hear falcon's bells.

" Lucrece," quoth he, " this night I must enjoy thee,
 " If thou deny, then force must work my way;
 " For in thy bed I purpose to destroy thee.
 " That done, some worthless slave of thine I'll slay,
 " To kill thine honour with thy life's decay; 516
 " And in thy dead arms do I mean to place him,
 " Swearing I slew him, seeing thee embrace him.

" So thy surviving husband shall remain
 " The scornful mark of every open eye; 520
 " Thy kinsmen hang their heads at this disdain,
 " Thy issue blurr'd with nameless bastardy;
 " And thou the author of their obloquy,
 " Shalt have thy trespass cited up in rhimes,
 " And sung by children in succeeding times. 525

" But if thou yield, I rest thy secret friend,
 " The fault unknown is, as a thought unacted;
 " A little harm done to a great good end,
 " For lawful policy remains enacted.
 " The poisonous simple sometimes is compacted 530
 " In a pure compound; being so apply'd,
 " His venom in effect is purify'd.

" Then for thy husband, and thy children's sake,
 " Tender my suit, bequeath not to their lot

THE RAPE OF LUCRECE.

97

"The shame, that from them no device can take, 535

"The blemish that will never be forgot,

"Worse than a slavish wive, or birth-hour's blot:

"For marks describ'd in men's nativity,

"Are nature's faults, not their own infamy."

Here with a cockatrice, dead-killing eye, 540

He rouseth up himself, and makes a pause;

While she, the picture of pure piety,

Like a white hind, under the gripe's sharp claws,

Pleads in a wilderness, where are no laws,

To the rough beast, that knows no gentle right, 545

Nor ought obeys but his foul appetite.

Look when a black-fac'd cloud the world doth threat,

In his dim mist th' aspiring mountains hiding,

From earth's dark womb some gentle gust doth get,

Which blow these pitchy vapours from their hiding,

Hind'ring their present fall by this dividing. 551

So his unhallow'd haste her words delays,

And moody Pluto wink while Orpheus plays.

Yet foul night-waking cat he doth but dally,

While in his hold-fast foot the weak mouse panteth 555

Her sad behaviour feeds his vulture folly,

A swallowing gulf, that e'en in plenty wanteth.

His ear her prayers admits, but his heart granteth

No penetrable entrance to her plaining;

Tears harden lust, tho' marble wear with raining. 560

Her pity-pleading eyes are sadly fix'd

In the remorseless wrinkles of his face:

Her modest eloquence with sighs is mix'd,

Which to her oratory adds more grace.

She puts the period often from his place, 565

And midst the sentence so her accent breaks,

That twice she doth begin e'er once she speaks.

She conjures him by high almighty Jove;

By knighthood, gentry, and sweet friendship's oath;

By her untimely tears, her husband's love: 570

By holy human-law, and common troth;
 By heaven and earth, and all the power of both;
 That to his borrow'd bed he make retire,
 And stoop to honour, not to foul desire.

Quoth she, "Reward not hospitality 575

"With such black payment as thou hast pretended;

"Mud not the fountain that gave drink to thee,

"Mar not the thing that cannot be amended:

"End thy ill aim, before thy suit be ended.

"He is no wood-man that doth bend his bow, 580

"To strike a poor unseasonable doe.

"My husband is thy friend, for his sake spare me;

"Thyself art mighty, for thine own sake leave me;

"Myself a weakling, do not then insnare me;

"Thou look'st not like deceit, do not deceive me, 185

"My sighs like whirlwinds labour hence to heave thee.

"If ever man was mov'd with woman's moans,

"Be moved with my tears, my sighs, my groans.

"All which together, like a troubled ocean,

"Beat at thy rocky and wreck-threat'ning heart, 590

"To soften it with their continual motion;

"For stones dissolv'd to water do convert.

"O! if no harder than a stone thou art,

"Melt at my tears, and be compassionate!

"Soft pity enters at an iron gate. 595

"In Tarquin's likeness I did entertain thee,

"Hast thou put on his shape to do him shame?

"To all the host of heaven I complain me; [name:

"Thou wrong'st his honour, wound'st his princely

"Thou art not what thou seem'st; and if the same,

"Thou seem'st not what thou art, a god, a king; 601

"For kings, like gods, should govern every thing.

"How will thy shame be seeded in thine age,

"When thus thy vices bud before thy spring?

"If in thy hope thou dar'st do such outrage, 605

"What dar'st thou not, when once thou art a king!

"O! be remember'd no outrageous thing

- " From vassal actors can be wip'd away,
 " Then kings misdeeds cannot be hid in clay.
 " This deed will make thee only lov'd for fear, 610
 " But happy monarchs still are fear'd for love;
 " With foul offenders thou perforce must bear,
 " When they in thee the like offences prove:
 " If but for fear of this, thy will remove;
 " For princes are the glass, the school, the book, 615
 " Where subjects eyes do learn, do read, do look.
 " And wilt thou be the school where lust shall learn?
 " Must he in thee read lectures of such shame?
 " Wilt thou be glass wherein it shall discern
 " Authority for sin, warrant for blame? 620
 " To privilege dishonour in thy name,
 " Thou back'st reproach against long-living laud,
 " And mak'st fair reputation but a bawd.
 " Hast thou command? by him that gave it thee
 " From a pure heart command thy rebel will: 625
 " Draw not thy sword to guard iniquity,
 " For it was lent thee all that brood to kill.
 " Thy princely office how canst thou fulfil,
 " When pattern'd by thy fault, foul Sin may say,
 " He learn'd to sin, and thou didst teach the way. 630
 " Think but how vile a spectacle it were,
 " To view thy present trespass in another:
 " Men's faults do seldom to themselves appear,
 " Their own transgressions partially they smother:
 " This guilt would seem death-worthy in thy brother.
 " O! how are they wrapt in with infamies, 636
 " That from their own misdeeds askance their eyes!
 " To thee, to thee, my heav'd up hands appeal,
 " Not to seducing lust thy rash relier;
 " I sue for exil'd majesty's repeal, 640
 " Let him return, and flattering thoughts retire.
 " His true respect will prison false desire,
 " And wipe the dim mist from thy doting eyne,
 " That thou shalt see thy state, and pity mine.

"Have done," quoth he, "my uncontrolled tide 645
 "Turns not, but swells the higher by this let;
 "Small lights are soon blown out, huge fires abide,
 "And with the wind in greater fury fret:
 "The petty streams that pay a daily debt
 "To their salt sovereign with their fresh false haste,
 "Add to his flow, but alter not his taste." 651

"Thou art," quoth she, "a sea, a sovereign king,
 "And lo! there falls into thy boundless flood
 "Black lust, dishonour, shame, misgoverning,
 "Who seek to stain the ocean of thy blood. 655
 "If all these petty ills should change thy good,
 "The sea within a puddle's womb is herfed,
 "And not the puddle in thy sea dispersed.

"So shall these slaves be king, and thou their slave;
 "Thou nobly base, they basely dignified; 660
 "Thou their fair life, and they their fouler grave;
 "Thou loathed in thy shame, they in thy pride:
 "The lesser thing should not the greater hide.
 "The cedar stoops not to the base shrub's foot,
 "But low shrubs wither at the cedar's root. 665

"So let thy thoughts, low vassals to thy state,—"
 "No more," quoth he, "by heaven I will not hear thee:
 "Yield to my love; if not, enforced hate,
 "Instead of love's coy touch, shall rudely tear thee:
 "That done, despitefully I mean to bear thee 670
 "Unto the base bed of some rascal groom,
 "To be thy partner in this shameful doom."

This said, he sets his foot upon the light,
 For light and lust are deadly enemies:
 Shame folded up in blind concealing night, 675
 When most unseen, then most doth tyrannize.
 The wolf has seiz'd his prey, the poor lamb cries,
 Till with her own white fleece her voice controll'd,
 Intombs her outcry in her lips sweet fold.

For with the nightly linen that she wears, 680
 H opens her piteous clamours in her head,

Cooling his hot face in the chafest tears
 That ever modest eyes with sorrow shed.
 O that prone lust should stain so pure a bed !
 The spots whereof, could weeping purify, 685
 Her tears should drop on them perpetually.

But she hath lost a dearer thing than life,
 And he hath won what he would lose again ;
 This forced league doth force a further strife,
 This momentary joy breeds months of pain, 690
 This hot desire converts to cold disdain.
 Pure Chastity is rifled of her store,
 And Lust, the thief, far poorer than before.

Look as the full-fed hound, or gorged hawk,
 Unapt for tender smell, or speedy flight, 695
 Make slow pursuit, or altogether balk
 The prey wherein by nature they delight :
 So surfeit-taking Tarquin fears this night ;
 His taste delicious, in digestion souring,
 Devours his will, that liv'd by foul devouring. 700

O ! deeper sin, than bottomless conceit
 Can comprehend in still imagination !
 Drunken Desire must vomit his receipt,
 E'er he can see his own abomination.
 While Lust is in his pride, no exclamation 705
 Can curb his heat, or reign his rash desire,
 'Till, like a jade, Self-will himself doth tire.

And then with lank and lean discolour'd chee k,
 With heavy eye, knit brow, and strengthless pace,
 Feeble Desire, all recreant, poor and meek, 710
 Like to a bankrupt beggar wails his case :
 The flesh being proud, Desire doth fight with Grace.
 For there it revels, and when that decays,
 The guilty rebel for remission prays.

So fares it with this fault-full Lord of Rome, 715
 Who this accomplishment so hotly chas'd ;
 For now against himself he sounds this doom,

That thro' the length of times he stands disgrac'd :
Besides, his soul's fair temple is defac'd ;
To whose weak ruins muster troops of cares, 720
To ask the spotted princess how she fares.

She says, her subjects with foul insurrection
Have batter'd down her consecrated wall,
And by their mortal fault brought in subjection
Her immortality, and made her thrall 725
To living death, and pain perpetual :
Which in her prescience she controlled still,
But her foresight could not fore-stall their will.

E'en in this thought thro' the dark night he stealeth,
A captive victor, that hath lost in gain : 730
Bearing away the wound, that nothing healeth,
The scar that will, despite of cure, remain :
Leaving his spoil perplex'd in greater pain.
She bears the load of lust he left behind,
And he the burden of a guilty mind. 735

He, like a thievish dog, creeps sadly thence,
She, like a weary'd lamb, lies panting there :
He scowls and hates himself for his offence,
She, desperate, with her nails her flesh doth tear :
He faintly flies, sweating with guilty fear ; 740
She stays, exclaiming on the direful night,
He runs, and chides his vanish'd loath'd delight.

He thence departs a heavy convertite ;
She there remains, a hopeless cast away :
He in his speed looks for the morning-light ; 745
She prays she never may behold the day :
" For day," quoth she, " night-scapes doth open lay ;
" And my true eyes have never practis'd how
" To cloak offences with a cunning brow.

" They think not but that every eye can see
" The same disgrace, which they themselves behold ;
" And therefore would they still in darkness be, 750
" To have their unseen sin remain untold.
" For they their guilt with weeping will unfold,

"And grave, like water that doth eat in steel, 755
 "Upon my cheeks what helpless shame they feel."

Here she exclaims against repose and rest,
 And bids her eyes hereafter still be blind :
 She wakes her heart, by beating on her breast,
 And bids it leap from thence, where it may find 760
 Some purer chest to close so pure a mind.
 Frantic with grief, thus breathes she forth her spight
 Against the unseen secrecy of night.

"O comfort-killing night ! image of hell !
 "Dim register ! and notary of shame ! 765
 "Black stage for tragedies and murders fell !
 "Vast sin-concealing Chaos ! nurse of Blame !
 "Blind muffled bawd ! dark harbour of defame !
 "Grim cave of death ! whispering conspirator
 "With clos'd tongu'd treason, and the ravisher ! 770

"O hateful, vaporous, and foggy night !
 "Since thou art guilty of my cureless crime,
 "Must thy mists to meet the eastern light,
 "Make war against proportion'd course of time :
 "Or if thou wilt permit the sun to climb 775
 "His wonted height, yet e'er he go to bed,
 "Knit poisonous clouds about his golden head.

"With rotten damps ravish the morning air,
 "Let their exhal'd unwholesome breaths make sick
 "The life of Purity, the supreme fair, 780
 "E'er he arrives his weary noon-tide prick :
 "And let thy misty vapours march so thick,
 "That in their smoaky ranks his smother'd light
 "May set at noon, and make perpetual night.

"Were Tarquin night, as he is but night's child, 785
 "The silver shining queen he would disdain ;
 "Her twinkling handmaids too (by him defil'd)
 "Thro' night's black bosom should not peep again.
 "So should I have co-partners in my pain :
 "And fellowship in woe doth woe assuage, 790
 "As palmers that make short their pilgrimage.

- " Where now ? have I no one to blush with me ?
 " To cross their arms, and hang their heads with mine ;
 " To mask their brows, and hide their infamy.
 " But I alone, alone must sit and pine ; 795
 " Seasoning the earth with showers of silver brine :
 " Mingling my talk with tears, my grief with groans,
 " Poor wasting monuments of lasting moans.
 " O Night ? thou furnace of foul-reeking smoke !
 " Let not the jealous day behold that face, 800
 " Which underneath thy black all-hiding cloak
 " Immodestly lies martyr'd with disgrace.
 " Keep still possession of thy gloomy place,
 " That all the faults, which in thy reign are made,
 " May likewise be sepulchred in thy shade. 805
 " Make me not object to the tell-tale day ;
 " The light will shew character'd in my brow,
 " The story of sweet Chastity's decay,
 " The impious breach of holy wedlock's vow.
 " Yea, the illiterate, that know not how 810
 " To cypher what is writ in learned books,
 " Will quote my loathsome trespass in my looks.
 " The nurse, to still her child, will tell my story,
 " And fright her crying babe with Tarquin's name :
 " The orator, to deck his oratory, 815
 " Will couple my reproach to Tarquin's shame.
 " Feast-finding minstrels, tuning my defame,
 " Will tye the hearers to attend each line,
 " How Tarquin wronged me, I Collatine.
 " Let my good name, that senseless reputation, 820
 " For Collatine's dear love be kept unspotted ;
 " If that be made a theme for disputation,
 " The branches of another root are rotted,
 " And undeserv'd reproach to him allotted,
 " That is as clear from this attain of mine, 825
 " As I, e'er this, was pure to Collatine.
 " O unseen shame ! invisible disgrace !
 " O unfelt sore ! crest-wounding private scar !
 " Reproach is stamp'd in Collatinus' face,

- " And Tarquin's eye may read the mote afar, 830
 " How, he in peace is wounded, not in war.
 " Alas ! how many bear such shameful blows,
 " Which not themselves, but he that gives them, knows?
 " If, Collatine, thine honour lay in me,
 " From me, by strong assault, it is bereft : 835
 " My honey lost, and I a drone-like bee,
 " Have no perfection of my summer left,
 " But robb'd and ransack'd by injurious theft :
 " In thy weak hive a wand'ring waip hath crept,
 " And suck'd the honey which thy chaste bee kept.
 " Yet am I guiltless of thy honour's wreck ? 841
 " Yet for thy honour did I entertain him ;
 " Coming from thee, I could not put him back,
 " For it had been dishonour to disdain him.
 " Besides, of weariness he did complain him, 845
 " And talk'd of virtue : O unlook'd for evil !
 " When virtue is profan'd in such a devil !
 " Why should the worm intrude the maiden bud ?
 " Or hateful cuckows hatch in sparrow's nest's ?
 " Or toads infect fair founts with venom'd mud ?
 " Or tyrant folly lurk in gentle breasts ? 851
 " Or kings be breakers of their own beliefs ?
 " But no perfection is so absolute,
 " That some impurity doth not pollute.
 " The aged man, that coffers up his gold, 855
 " Is plagu'd with cramps, and gout, and painful fits ;
 " And scarce hath eyes his treasure to behold :
 " But still like pining Tantalus he sits,
 " And useless bans the harvest of his wits,
 " Having no other pleasure of his gain, 860
 " But torment, that it cannot cure his pain.
 " So then he hath it, when he cannot use it,
 " And leaves it to be master'd by his young,
 " Who in their pride do presently abuse it :
 " Their father was too weak, and they too strong, 865
 " To hold their cursed blessed fortune long.

" The sweets we wish for, turn to loathed fours,
 " E'en in the moment that we call them ours.

" Unruly blasts wait on the tender spring;
 " Unwholesome weeds take root with precious flowers;
 " The adder hisseth where the sweet birds sing; 871
 " What virtue breeds, iniquity devours:
 " We have no good, that we can say is ours:
 " But ill-annexed Opportunity,
 " Or kills his life, or else his quality. 875

" O! Opportunity! thy guilt is great;
 " 'Tis thou that executes the traitor's treason;
 " 'Thou set'st the wolf where he the lamb may get;
 " Whoever plots the sin, thou point'st the season:
 " 'Tis thou that spurn'st at right, at law, at reason;
 " And in thy shady cell, where none may spy her, 881
 " Sits Sin to seize the souls, that wander by her.

" Thou mak'st the vestal violate her oath;
 " Thou blow'st the fire when Temperance is thaw'd:
 " Thou smother'st Honesty, thou murder'st Troth; 885
 " Thou foul abettor, thou notorious bawd!
 " Thou plantest Scandal, and displacest Laud:
 " Thou ravisher, thou traitor, thou false thief!
 " Thy honey turns to gall, thy joy to grief.

" Thy secret pleasure turns to open shame; 890
 " Thy private feasting to a public fast;
 " Thy smoothing titles to a ragged name;
 " Thy sugar'd tongue to bitter wormwood taste:
 " Thy violent vanities can never last.
 " How comes it then, vile Opportunity, 895
 " Being so bad, such numbers seek for thee?

" When wilt thou be the humble suppliant's friend,
 " And bring him where his suit may be obtain'd?
 " When wilt thou sort an hour great strifes to end?
 " Or free that soul, which wretchedness hath chain'd?
 " Give physic to the sick, ease to the pain'd? 901
 " The poor, lame, blind, halt, creep, cry out for thee?
 " But they ne'er meet with Opportunity.

- " The patient dies while the physician sleeps ;
" The orphan pines while the oppressor feeds : 905
" Justice is feasting while the widow weeps ;
" Advice is sporting while infection breeds :
" Thou grant'st no time for charitable deeds.
" Wrath, Envy, Treason, Rape, and Murders rages ;
" Thy heinous hours wait on them, as their pages. 910
" When Truth and Virtue have to do with thee,
" A thousand crosses keep them from thy aid ;
" They buy thy help : but Sin ne'er gives a fee ;
" He gratis comes, and thou art well apaid,
" As well to hear, as grant what he hath said : 915
" My Collatine would else have come to me,
" When Tarquin did ; but he was staid by thee.
" Guilty thou art of murder, and of theft ;
" Guilty of perjury and subornation ;
" Guilty of treason, forgery and shift ; 920
" Guilty of incest, that abomination ;
" An accessary by thine inclination
" To all sins past, and all that are to come,
" From the creation to the general doom.
" Mishapen Time, copesmate of ugly Night ; 925
" Swift subtle post, carrier of grisly Care ;
" Eater of youth, false slave to false Delight, [snare :
" Base watch of woes, Sin's pack-horse, Virtue's
" Thou nurdest all, and murderest all that are.
" O! hear me then, injurious shifting Time ! 930
" Be guilty of my death, since of my crime.
" Why hath thy servant Opportunity
" Betray'd the Hours, thou gav'st me to repose?
" Cancel'd my fortunes, and enchained me
" To endless date of never-ending woes ? 935
" Time's office is to find the hate of foes,
" To eat up Error, by Opinion bred ;
" Not spend the dowry of a lawful bed.
" Time's glory is to calm contending kings ;
" To unmask falsehood, and bring truth to light ; 940

- “ To stamp the seal of time on aged things ;
“ To wake the morn, and centinel the night ;
“ To wrong the wronger, till he render right ;
“ To ruinate proud buildings, with thy hours, 944
“ And smear with dust their glittering golden towers :
“ To fill with worm-holes stately monuments ;
“ To feed oblivion with decay of things ;
“ To blot old books, and alter their contents ;
“ To pluck the quills from ancient ravens' wings ;
“ To dry the old oak's sap, and cherish springs ; 950
“ To spoil antiquities of hammer'd steel,
“ And turn the giddy round of fortune's wheel :
“ To shew the beldame daughters of her daughter ;
“ To make the child a man, the man a child ;
“ To slay the tiger, that doth live by-slaughter ; 955
“ To tame the unicorn, and lion wild ;
“ To mock the subtle, in themselves beguil'd ;
“ To cheer the plowman with increaseful crops,
“ And waste huge stones with little water-drops.
“ Why work 'st thou mischief in thy pilgrimage, 960
“ Unless thou could 'st return to make amends ?
“ One poor retiring minute in an age,
“ Would purchase thee a thousand thousand friends ;
“ Lending him wit, that to bad debtors lends. [back,
“ O ! this dread night ! would 'st thou one hour come
“ I could prevent this storm, and shun this wrack. 966
“ Thou ceaseless lacky to Eternity,
“ With some mischance cross Tarquin in his flight ;
“ Devise extremes beyond extremity,
“ To make him curse this cursed crimeful night : 970
“ Let ghastly shadows his lewd eyes affright ;
“ And the dire thought of his committed evil
“ Shape every bush a hideous shapeless devil.
“ Disturb his hours of rest with restless trances ;
“ Afflict him in his bed with bed-rid groans : 975
“ Let there bechance him pitiful mischances,
“ To make him moan ; but pity not his moans :
“ Stone him with harden'd hearts harder than stones ;

- " And let mild women to him lose their mildness;
" Wilder to him than tigers in their wildness. 980
- " Let him have time to tear his curled hair;
" Let him have time against himself to rave;
" Let him have time of time's help to despair;
" Let him have time to live a loathed slave;
" Let him have time a beggar's orts to crave, 985
" And time to see one, that by alms doth live,
" Disdain to him disdained scraps to give.
- " Let him have time to see his friends his foes,
" And merry fools, to mock at him resort:
" Let him have time to mark how slow time goes, 990
" In time of sorrow; and how swift and short
" His time of folly, and his time of sport:
" And ever let his unrecalling crime
" Have time to wail th' abusing of his time.
- " O! Time! thou tutor both to good and bad! 995
" Teach me to curse him, that thou taught'st this ill;
" At his own shadow let the thief run mad,
" Himself, himself seek every hour to kill:
" Such wretched hands such wretched blood should spill.
" For who so base would such an office have, 1000
" As slanderous death's-man to so base a slave?
- " The baser is he coming from a king,
" To shame his hope with deeds degenerate;
" The mightier man, the mightier is the thing,
" That makes him honour'd or begets him hate: 1005
" For greatest scandal waits on greatest state.
" The moon being clouded presently is mist;
" But little stars may hide them, when they list.
- " The crow may bathe his cole-black wings in mire,
" And unperceiv'd fly with the filth away; 1010
" But if the like the snow white swan desire,
" The stain upon his silver down will stay.
" Poor grooms are fightless night, kings glorious day,
" Gnats are unnoted wheresoe'er they fly,
" But eagles gaz'd upon with every eye. 1015

" Out idle words, servants to shallow fools !
 " Unprofitable sounds, weak arbitrators !
 " Busy yourselves in skill contending schools ;
 " Debate, where leisure serves, with dull debators :
 " To trembling clients be you mediators : 1020
 " For me I force not argument a straw,
 " Since that my case is past the help of law.

" In vain I rail at Opportunity,
 " At Time, at Tarquin, and unsearchful Night !
 " In vain I cavil with mine infamy, 1025
 " In vain I spurn at my confirm'd despight :
 " This helpless smoke of words doth me no right.
 " The remedy indeed to do me good,
 " Is to let forth my foul defiled blood.

" Poor hand ! why quiver'st thou at this decree ? 1030
 " Honour thyself to rid me of this shame :
 " For if I die, my honour lives in thee ;
 " But if I live, thou liv'st in my defame ;
 " Since thou could not defend thy loyal dame,
 " And wast afraid to scratch her wicked foe, 1035
 " Kill both thyself, and her for yielding so."

This said, from her betumbled couch she starteth,
 To find some desperate instrument of death ;
 But this no slaughter-house, no tool imparteth,
 To make more vent for passage of her breath, 1040
 Which thronging through her lips so vanisheth,
 As smoke from *Ætna*, that in air consumes,
 Or that which from discharged cannon fumes.

" In vain," quoth she, " I live, and seek in vain
 " Some happy mean to end a hapless life : 1045
 " I fear'd by Tarquin's falchion to be slain ;
 " Yet for the self-same purpose seek a knife :
 " But when I fear'd I was a loyal wife ;
 " So am I now : Oh no ! that cannot be ;
 " Of that true type hath Tarquin rifled me. 1050
 " Oh ! that is gone for which I sought to live,
 " And therefore now I need not fear to die ;

- " To clear this spot by death (at least) I give
 " A badge of fame to Slander's livery,
 " A dying life to living infamy. 1055
 " Poor helpless help, the treasure stol'n away,
 " To burn the guiltless casket where it lay !
 " Well, well, dear Collatine ! thou shalt not know
 " The stained taste of violated troth :
 " I will not wrong thy true affection so, 1060
 " To flatter thee with an infringed oath :
 " This bastard graff shall never come to growth.
 " He shall not boast, who did thy stock pollute,
 " That thou art doating father of his fruit.
 " Nor shall he smile at thee in secret thought, 1065
 " Nor laugh with his companions at thy state :
 " But thou shalt know thy interest was not bought,
 " Basely with gold, but stol'n from forth thy gate.
 " For me, I am the mistress of my fate,
 " And with my trespasss never will dispense, 1070
 " Till life to death acquit my first offence.
 " I will not poison thee with my attaint,
 " Nor fold my fault in cleanly coin'd excuses ;
 " My fable ground of sin I will not paint,
 " To hide the truth of this false night's abuses : 1075
 " My tongue shall utter all ; mine eyes, like sluices,
 " As from a mountain spring that feeds a dale,
 " Shall gush pure streams to purge my impure tale."
 By this lamenting Philomel had ended
 The well-tun'd warble of her nightly sorrow ; 1080
 And solemn Night with slow sad gate descended
 To ugly hell ; when lo ! the blushing morrow
 Lends light to all fair eyes, that light will borrow :
 But cloudy Lucrece shames herself to see,
 And therefore still in night would cloister'd be. 1085
 Revealing Day through every cranny spies,
 And seems to point her out where she sits weeping ;
 To whom she sobbing speaks, " O ! eye of eyes ! [ing ;
 " Why pry'st thou through my window ? Leave thy peep-

"Mock with thy tickling beams eyes that are sleeping.
 "Brand not my forehead with thy piercing light; 1091
 "For day hath nought to do what's done by night."

Thus cavils she with every thing she sees,
 True grief is fond, and testy as a child,
 Who way-ward once, his mood with nought agrees.
 Old woes, not infant sorrows bear them mild; 1096
 Continuance tames the one, the other wild,
 Like an unpractis'd swimmer, plunging still,
 With too much labour, drowns for want of skill.

So she deep-drenched in a sea of care, 1100
 Holds disputation with each thing she views;
 And to herself all sorrow doth compare,
 No object but her passions strength renews,
 And as one shifts, another straight ensues.
 Sometime her grief is dumb, and hath no words;
 Sometime 'tis mad, and too much talk affords. 1106

The little birds, that turn their mornings joy,
 Make her moans mad with their sweet melody.
 For mirth doth search the bottom of annoy?
 Sad souls are slain in merry company; 1110
 Grief best is pleas'd with grief's society.
 True sorrow then is feelingly surpris'd,
 When with like semblance it is sympathis'd.

'Tis double death to drown in ken of shore;
 He ten times pines, that pines beholding food: 1115
 To see the salve doth make the wound ake more;
 Great grief grieves most at that will do it good;
 Deep woes roll forward like a gentle flood,
 Which, being stopt, the bounding banks o'erflows:
 Grief dallied with, nor law, nor limit knows. 1120

"You mocking birds," quoth she, "your tunes intomb
 "Within your hollow swelling feather'd breasts;
 "And in my hearing be you mute and dumb;
 "My restless discord loves no stops nor rests;
 "A woeful hostess brooks not merry guests. 1125

" Relish your nimble notes to pleasing ears,
 " Distress likes dumps, when time is kept with tears.

" Come Philomel, that sing'st of ravishment,
 " Make thy sad grove in my dishevel'd hair :
 " As the dank earth weeps at thy languishment, 1130
 " So I at each sad strain will strain a tear,
 " And with deep groans the diapason bear.
 " For burden-wise I'll hum on Tarquin still,
 " While thou on Tercus descant'st better skill.

" And while against a thorn thou bear'st thy part,
 " To keep thy sharp woes waking ; wretched I, 1136
 " To imitate thee well, against my heart
 " Will fix a sharp knife, to affright mine eye,
 " Who if it wink, shall thereon fall and die.
 " These means, as frets upon an instrument, 1140
 " Shall tune our heart-strings to true languishment.

" And for, poor bird, thou sing'st not in the day,
 " As shaming any eye should thee behold ;
 " Some dark deep desert seated from the way,
 " That knows not parching heat, nor freezing cold,
 " Will we find out; and there we will unfold 1146
 " To creatures stern, sad tunes to change their kinds,
 " Since men prove beasts, let beasts bear gentle minds."

As the poor frightened deer, that stands at gaze,
 Wildly determining which way to fly ; 1150
 Or one incompass'd with a winding maze,
 That cannot tread the way out readily :
 So with herself is she in mutiny,
 To live or die, which of the twain were better,
 When life is sham'd, and death reproaches debtor.

" To kill myself," quoth she, " alack ! what were it,
 " But with my body my poor soul's pollution ? 1157
 " They that lose half, with greater patience bear it,
 " Than they whose whole is swallow'd in confusion.
 " That mother tries a merciless conclusion, 1160
 " Who having two sweet babes, when death takes one
 " Will slay the other, and be nurse to none.

- " My body, or my soul, which was the dearer,
" When the one pure, the other made divine?
" Whose love of either to myself was nearer, 1165
" When both were kept from heaven, and Collatine?
" Ay me! the bark peal'd from the lofty pine,
" His leaves will wither, and his sap decay;
" So must my soul, her bark being peal'd away.
" Her house is sack'd, her quiet interrupted; 1170
" Her mansion batter'd by the enemy,
" Her sacred temple spotted, spoil'd, corrupted,
" Grossly ingirt with daring infamy,
" Then let it not be call'd impiety,
" If in this blemish'd fort I make some hole, 1175
" Through which I may convey this troubled soul.
" Yet die I will not, till my Collatine
" Have heard the cause of my untimely death;
" That he may vow, in that sad hour of mine,
" Revenge on him that made me stop my breath.
" My stained blood to Tarquin I'll bequeath. 1181
" Which by him tainted shall for him be spent,
" And as his due, writ in my testament.
" My honour I'll bequeath unto the knife,
" That wounds my body so dishonoured: 1185
" 'Tis honour to deprive dishonour'd life;
" The one will live, the other being dead;
" So of shame's ashes shall my fame be bred.
" For in my death I murder shameful scorn;
" My shame so dead, my honour is new born. 1190
" Dear lord of that dear jewel I have lost!
" What legacy shall I bequeath to thee!
" My resolution, love, shall be thy boast,
" By whose example thou reveng'd may'st be:
" How Tarquin must be us'd, read it in me. 1195
" Myself thy friend, will kill myself thy foe;
" And for my sake serve thou false Tarquin so.
" This brief abridgement of my will I make:
" My soul and body to the skies, and ground;

" My resolution (husband) do you take ; 1200
 " Mine honour be the knife's, that makes my wound ;
 " My shame be his, that did my fame confound ;
 " And all my fame that lives, disburfed be
 " To those that live, and think no shame of me.

" Thou Collatine shall oversee this will, 1205
 " How was I overseen that thou shalt see it ?
 " My blood shall wash the slander of mine ill ;
 " My life's foul deed, my life's fair end shall free it.
 " Faint not, faint heart, but stoutly say, so be it ;
 " Yield to my hand, my hand shall conquer thee ; 1210
 " Thou dead, both die, and both shall victors be."

This plot of death when sadly she had laid,
 And wip'd the brinish pearl from her bright eyes ;
 With untun'd tongue she hoarsly call'd her maid,
 Whose swift obedience to her mistress hies ; 1215
 For fleet-wing'd duty with thought's feathers flies,
 Poor Lucrece' cheeks unto her maid seem so,
 As winter meads, when sun doth melt their snow.

Her mistress she doth give demure good-morrow,
 With soft slow tongue, true mark of modesty ; 1220
 And sorts a sad look to her lady's sorrow,
 (For why, her face wore Sorrow's livery)
 But durst not ask of her audaciously,
 Why her two suns were cloud-eclipsed so :
 Nor why her fair cheeks over-wash'd with woe. 1225

But as the earth doth weep, the sun being set,
 Each flower moisten'd like a melting eye :
 Even so the maid with swelling drops 'gan wet
 Her circled eyne, enforc'd by sympathy
 Of those fair suns set in her mistress' sky ; 1230
 Who in a salt-wav'd ocean quench'd their light,
 Which makes the maid weep like the dewy night.

A pretty while these pretty creatures stand,
 Like ivory conduits coral cisterns filling :
 One justly weeps, the other takes in hand 1235

No cause, but company, of her drops spilling;
 Their gentle sex to weep are often willing;
 Grieving themselves to guests at other's smart;
 And then they drown their eyes, or break their hearts.

For men have marble, women waxen minds, 1240
 And therefore they are form'd as marble will:
 The weak oppress'd, th' impression of strange kinds
 Is form'd in them by force, by fraud, or skill.
 Then call them not the authors of their ill,
 No more than wax shall be accounted evil, 1245
 Wherein is stamp'd the semblance of a devil.

Their smoothness, like a goodly Champain plain,
 Lays open all the little worms that creep;
 In men, as in a rough-grown grove remain
 Cave-keeping evils, that obscurely sleep; 1250
 Through chrystal walls each little mote will peep.
 Tho' men can cover crimes with bold stern looks,
 Poor women's faces are their own faults books.

No man inveighs against the wither'd flower, 1254
 But chides rough winter, that the flower has kill'd;
 Nor that's devour'd, but that which doth devour,
 Is worthy blame; O let it not be hild
 Poor womens faults, that they are so fulfill'd
 With men's abuses; those proud lords to blame,
 Make weak-made women tenants to their shame. 1260

The precedent whereof in Lucrece view.
 Affail'd by night with circumstances strong
 Of present death and shame that might ensue,
 By that her death to do her husband wrong;
 Such danger to resistance did belong, 1265
 That dying fear thro' all her body spread,
 And who cannot abuse a body dead?

By this mild patience bid fair Lucrece speak
 To the poor Counterfeit of her complaining,
 "My girl," quoth she, "on what occasion break 1270
 "Those tears from thee, that down thy cheeks are
 "If thou dost weep for grief of my sustaining, [raining?

- " Know, gentle wench, it small avails my mood ;
" If tears could help, mine own would do me good.
" But tell me, girl, when went," and there she staid
Till after a deep groan, " Tarquin from hence? 1276
" Madam, e'er I was up," reply'd the maid,
" The more to blame my sluggard negligence :
" Yet with the fault I thus far can dispense ;
" Myself was stirring e'er the break of day, 1280
" And e'er I rose was Tarquin gone away.
" But lady, if your maid may be so bold,
" She would request to know your heaviness."
" O peace !" quoth Lucrece, " if it should be told,
" The repetition cannot make it less ; 1285
" For more it is than I can well express :
" And that deep torture may be call'd a hell,
" When more is felt than one has power to tell.
" Go, get me hither paper, ink, and pen ;
" Yet save that labour, for I have them here : 1290
" (What should I say ?) one of my husband's men
" Bid thou be ready by and by, to bear
" A letter to my lord, my love, my dear ;
" Bid him with speed prepare to carry it, 1294
" The cause craves haste, and it will soon be writ."

Her maid is gone, and she prepares to write,
First hovering o'er the paper with her quill ;
Conceit and grief an eager combat fight,
What wit sets down is blotted straight with will ;
This is too curious good, this blunt and ill : 1300
Much like a press of people at a door,
Throng her inventions, which shall go before.

At last she thus begins : " Thou worthy lord
" Of that unworthy wife, that greeteth thee ;
" Health to thy person, next vouchsafe t' afford 1305
" (If ever, love, thy Lucrece thou wilt see)
" Some present speed to come, and visit me.
" So I commend me from our house in grief ;
" My woes are tedious, tho' my words are brief."

Here folds she up the tenor of her woe, 1310
 Her certain sorrow writ uncertainly :
 By this short schedule Colatine may know
 Her grief but not her grief's true quality ;
 She dares not thereof make discovery,
 Lest he should hold it her own gross abuse, 1315
 E'er she with blood had stain'd her strain'd excuse.

Besides, the life and feeling of her passion
 She hords, to spend when he is by to hear her ;
 When sighs, and groans, and tears may grace the fashion
 Of her disgrace, the better so to clear her 1320
 From that suspicion, which the world might bear her :
 To shun this blot she would not blot the letter
 With words, till action might become them better.

To see sad sights moves more, than hear them told ;
 For then the eye interprets to the ear 1325
 The heavy motion, that it doth behold ;
 When every part a part of woe doth bear,
 'Tis but a part of sorrow that we hear.
 Deep sounds make lesser noise, than shallow fords ;
 And sorrow ebbs being blown with wind of words.

Her letter now is seal'd, and on it writ, 1331
 At Ardea to my lord with more than haste ;
 The post attends, and she delivers it,
 Charging the four-fac'd groom to hie as fast
 As lagging fowls before the northern blast. 1335
 Speed more than speed, but dull and slow she deems ;
 Extremity still urgeth such extremes.

The homely villain curtsies to her low,
 And blushing on her with a stedfast eye,
 Receives the scroll without or yea, or no, 1340
 And forthwith bashful innocence doth hie.
 But they, whose guilt within their bosom lies,
 Imagine every eye beholds their blame ;
 For Lucrece thought he blush'd to see her shame.

When, silly groom (God wot) it was defect 1345
 Of spirit, life, and bold audacity ;

Such harmless creatures have a true respect
 To talk in deeds, while others faucily
 Promise more speed, but do it leisurely :
 Even so this pattern of the worn-out age 1350
 Pawn'd honest looks, but laid no words to gage.

His kindled duty kindled her mistrust,
 That two red fires in both their faces blaz'd.
 She thought he blush'd as knowing Tarquin's lust,
 And blushing with him, wistly on him gaz'd ; 1355
 Her earnest eye did make him more amaz'd :
 The more she saw the blood his cheeks replenish,
 The more she thought he spy'd in her some blemish.

But long she thinks till he return again,
 And yet the duteous vassal scarce is gone ; 1360
 The weary time she cannot entertain,
 For now 'tis stale to sigh, to weep, and groan ;
 So woe hath wearied woe, moan tired moan,
 That she her complaints a little while doth stay,
 Pausing for means to mourn some newer way. 1365

At last she calls to mind where hangs a piece
 Of skilful painting made for Priam's Troy ;
 Before the which is drawn the power of Greece,
 For Helen's rape the city to destroy,
 Threatning cloud-kissing Ilion with annoy ; 1370
 Which the conceited painter drew so proud,
 As heaven (it seem'd) to kiss the turrets bow'd.

A thousand lamentable objects there,
 In scorn of nature, art gave lifeless life :
 Many a dire drop seem'd a weeping tear 1375
 Shed for the slaughter'd husband by the wife.
 The red blood reek'd to shew the painter's strife,
 And dying eyes gleam'd forth their ashy lights,
 Like dying coals burnt out in tedious nights.

There might you see the labouring pioneer 1380
 Begrim'd with sweat, and smeared all with dust ;
 And from the towers of Troy there would appear
 The very eyes of men thro' loop-holes thrust,
 Gazing upon the Greeks with little lust.

Such sweet obfervance in this work was had, 1385
That one might fee thofe far-off eyes look fad.

In great commanders, grace and majeſty,
You might behold triumphing in their faces ;
In youth quick-bearing and dexterity :
And here and there the painter interlaces 1390
Pale cowards marching on with trembling paces ;
Which heartleſs peaſants did ſo well reſemble
That one would ſwear he ſaw them quake and tremble.

In Ajax and Ulyſſes, O ! what art
Of phyſiognomy might one behold ! 1395
The face of either cypher'd either's heart ;
Their face, their manners moſt expreſſly told.
In Ajax' eyes blunt rage and rigour roll'd.
But the mild glance that ſly Ulyſſes lent,
Shew'd deep regard, and ſmiling government. 1400

There pleading might you ſee grave Neſtor ſtand,
As 'twere encouraging the Greeks to fight,
Making ſuch ſober action with his hand,
That it beguil'd attention, charm'd the fight :
In ſpeech it ſeem'd, his beard all ſilver white, 1405
Wagg'd up and down, and from his lips did fly
Thin winding breath, which purld up to the ſky.

About him were a preſs of gaping faces,
Which ſeem'd to ſwallow up his ſound advice ;
All jointly liſtning, but with ſeveral graces, 1410
As if ſome mermaid did their ears entice ;
Some high, ſome low, the painter was ſo nice.
The ſcalps of many almoſt hid behind,
To jump up higher ſeem'd to mock the mind.

Here one man's hand lean'd on another's head, 1415
His noſe being ſhadow'd by his neighbour's ear ;
Here one being throng'd bears black all blown and red ;
Another ſmother'd, ſeems to pelt and ſwear ;
And in their rage, (ſuch ſigns of rage they bear),
As but for loſs of Neſtor's golden words, 1420
It ſeem'd they would debate with angry ſwords.

For much imaginary work was there ;
 Conceit deceitful, so compact so kind,
 That for Achilles' image stood his spear,
 Grip'd in an armed hand, himself behind 1425
 Was left unseen, save to the eye of mind ;
 A hand, a foot, a face, a leg, a head,
 Stood for the whole to be imagined.

And from the walls of strong-besieged Troy,
 When their brave hope, bold Hector march'd to field,
 Stood many Trojan mothers, sharing joy 1431
 To see their youthful sons bright weapons wield ;
 And to their hope they such odd action yield,
 That thro' their light joy seem'd to appear, 1434
 (Like bright things stain'd) a kind of heavy fear.

And from the strand of Dardan, where they fought,
 To Simois' reedy banks, the red blood ran ;
 Whose waves to imitate the battle fought
 With swelling ridges ; and their ranks began
 To break upon the galled shore, and then 1440
 Retire again, till meeting greater ranks
 They join, and shoot their foam at Simois banks.

To this well-painted piece is Lucrece come
 To find a face where all distress is stell'd.
 Many she sees, where cares have carved some, 1445
 But none where all distress and dolour dwell'd,
 Till she despairing Hecuba beheld,
 Staring on Priam's wounds with her old eyes,
 Which bleeding under Pirrhus' proud foot lies.

In her the painter had anatomiz'd 1450
 Time's ruin, beauty's wreck, and grim cares reign ;
 Her cheeks with chaps and wrinkles were disguis'd ;
 Of what she was, no semblance did remain ;
 Her blue blood chang'd to black in every vein.
 Wanting the spring, that those shrunk pipes had fed,
 Shew'd life imprison'd in a body dead. 1456

On this sad shadow Lucrece spends her eyes,
 And shapes her sorrow to the beldam's woes ;

Who nothing wants to answer her but cries,
 And bitter words to ban her cruel foes. 1460
 The painter was no god to lend her those;
 And therefore Lucrece swears he did her wrong,
 To give her so much grief, and not a tongue.

"Poor instrument," quoth she, "without a sound!
 "I'll tune thy woes with my lamenting tongue; 1465
 "And drop sweet balm in Priam's painted wound,
 "And rail on Pyrrhus, that hath doth him wrong,
 "And with my tears quench Troy, that burns so long;
 "And with my knife scratch out the angry eyes
 "Of all the Greeks, that are thine enemies. 1470

"Shew me the strumpet, that began this stir,
 "That with my nails her beauty I may tear.
 "Thy heat of lust, fond Paris did incur
 "This load of wrath, that burning Troy did bear;
 "Thy eye kindled the fire that burneth here: 1475
 "And here in Troy, for trespass of thine eye,
 "The fire, the son, the dame, and daughter die.

"Why should the private pleasure of some one
 "Become the public plague of many more?
 "Let sin alone committed, light alone 1480
 "Upon his head, that hath transgressed so.
 "Let guiltless souls be freed from guilty woe.
 "For one's offence why should so many fall,
 "To plague a private sin in general?

"Lo! here weeps Hecuba, here Priam dies! 1485
 "Here manly Hector faints, here Troilus sounds!
 "Here friend by friend in bloody channel lies!
 "And friend to friend gives unadvised wounds!
 "And one man's lust these many lives confounds!
 "Had doating Priam check'd his son's desire, 1490
 "Troy had been bright with fame, and not with fire."

Here feelingly she weeps Troy's painted woes:
 For sorrow, like a heavy hanging bell,
 Once set on ringing, with his own weight goes;
 Then little strength rings out the doleful knell. 1495
 So Lucrece set a work, sad tales doth tell

To pencil'd pensiveness and colour'd sorrow;
She lends them words, and she their looks doth borrow.

She throws her eyes about the painting round,
And whom she finds forlorn she doth lament. 1500
At last she sees a wretched image bound,
That piteous looks, to Phrygian shepherds lent;
His face, tho' full of cares, yet shew'd content.
Onward to Troy, with these blunt swains he goes,
So mild, that patience seem'd to scorn his woes. 1505

In him the painter labour'd with his skill,
To hide deceit, and give the harmless show,
An humble gait, calm looks, eyes wailing still,
A brow unbent, that seem'd to welcome woe;
Cheeks, neither red nor pale, but mingled so, 1510
That blushing red no guilty instance gave,
Nor ashy pale, the fair that false hearts have.

But, like a constant and confirmed devil,
He entertained a show so seeming just;
And therein so incons'd his secret evil, 1515
That jealousy itself could not mistrust,
False creeping craft and perjury should thrust
Into so bright a day such black-fac'd storms,
Or blot with hell-born sin such saint-like forms.

The well-skill'd workman this mild image drew 1520
For perjur'd Sinon, whose enchanting story
The credulous old Priam after slew;
Whose words like wild-fire burnt the shining glory
Of rich-built Ilion, that the skies were sorry.
And little stars shot from their fixed places, 1525
When their glass fell wherein they view'd their faces.

This picture she advisedly perus'd,
And chid the painter for his wond'rous skill:
Saying, some shape in Sinon's was abus'd,
So fair a form lodg'd not a mind so ill. 1530
And still on him she gaz'd, and gazing still,
Such signs of truth in his plain face she spied,
That she concludes, the picture was belied.

"It cannot be," quoth she, "that so much guile,"
 She would have said, can lurk in such a look; 1535
 But Tarquin's shape came in her mind the while,
 And from her tongue, can lurk, from cannot, took:
 It cannot be, she in that sense forsook,
 And turn'd it thus, "It cannot be I find,
 "But such a face should bear a wicked mind. 1540

"For e'en as subtle Sinon here is painted,
 "So sober sad, so weary, and so mild,
 "(As if with grief or travel he had fainted)
 "To me came Tarquin armed, so beguil'd
 "With outward honesty, but yet defil'd 1545
 "With inward vice; as Priam him did cherish,
 "So did I Tarquin, so my Troy did perish.

"Look, look how listening Priam wets his eyes
 "To see those borrowed tears that Sinon sheds!
 "Priam, why art thou old, and yet not wise? 1550
 "For every tear he falls, a Trojan bleeds;
 "His eyes drop fire, no water thence proceeds.
 "Those round clear pearls of his that move thy pity.
 "Are balls of quenchless fire to burn thy city.

"Such devils steal effects from lightless hell; 1555
 "For Sinon in his fire doth quake with cold,
 "And in that cold hot-burning fire doth dwell;
 "These contraries such unity do hold,
 "Only to flatter fools and make them bold: 1559
 "So Priam's trust false Sinon's tears doth flatter,
 "That he finds means to burn his Troy with water.

Here all enrag'd such passion her assails,
 That patience is quite beaten from her breast;
 She tears the senseless Sinon with her nails,
 Comparing him to that unhappy guest, 1565
 Whose deed hath made herself, herself detest.
 "At last she smilingly with this gives o'er, [sore."
 "Fool! fool!" quoth she, "his wounds will not be
 Thus ebbs and flows the current of her sorrow,
 And time doth weary time with her complaining, 1570

THE RAPE OF LUCRECE.

125

She looks for night, and then she longs for morrow,
And both she thinks too long with her remaining;
Short time seems long, in sorrows sharp sustaining.
Tho' woe be heavy, yet it seldom sleeps,
And they that watch, see time how slow it creeps. 1575

Which all this time hath over-slipt her thought,
That she with painted images hath spent,
Being from the feeling of her own grief brought,
By deep surmise of others detriment,
Losing her woes in shews of discontent. 1580
It easeth some, tho' none it ever cur'd,
To think their dolour others have endur'd.

But now the mindful messenger comes back,
Brings home his lord, and other company;
Who finds his Lucrece clad in mourning black, 1585
And round about her tear-distained eye
Blue circles stream'd like rainbows in the sky.
These watergalls in her dim element,
Foretel new storms to those already spent.

Which when her sad-beholding husband saw, 1590
Amazedly in her sad face he stares:
Her eyes tho' sod in tears, look red, and raw,
Her lively colour kill'd with deadly cares.
He hath no power to ask her how she fares;
But stood like old acquaintance in a trance, 1595
Met far from hence, wond'ring each other's chance.

At last he takes her by the bloodless hand,
And thus begins: "What uncouth ill event
"Hath thee befall'n, that thou dost trembling stand?
"Sweet love! what spite hath thy fair colour spent?
"Why art thou thus attir'd in discontent? 1601
"Unmask, dear dear! this moody heaviness,
"And tell thy grief that we may give redress."

Three times with sighs she gives her sorrows fire,
E'er once she can discharge one word of woe: 1605
At length address'd to answer his desire,

She modestly prepares to let them know
 Her honour is ta'en prisoner by the foe;
 While Collatine and his consoled lords
 With sad attention long to hear her words.

1618

And now this pale swan, in her wat'ry nest,
 Begins the sad dirge of her certain ending.

"Few words," quoth she, "shall fit the trespass best,
 "Where no excuse can give the fault amending;
 "In me more woes than words are now depending:
 "And my laments would be drawn out too long, 1618
 "To tell them all with one poor tired tongue.

"Then be this all the task it hath to say,
 "Dear husband in the interest of thy bed
 "A stranger came, and on that pillow lay, 1620
 "Where thou wast wont to rest thy weary head;
 "And what wrong else may be imagined
 "By foul enforcement might be done to me,
 "From that, alas! thy Lucrece is not free.

"For in the dreadful dead of dark midnight, 1625
 "With shining falchion in my chamber came
 "A creeping creature with a flaming light,
 "And softly cry'd, 'Awake thou Roman dame!
 "And entertain my love else lasting shame
 "On thee and thine this night I will inflict, 1630
 "If thou my love's desire do contradict.

'For some hard favour'd groom of thine,' quoth he,
 'Unless thou yoke thy liking to my will,
 'I'll murder straight, and then I'll slaughter thee,
 'And swear I found you where you did fulfil 1635
 'The loathsome act of lust; and so did kill
 'The lechers in their deed: this act will be
 'My fame, and thy perpetual infamy.'

"With this I did begin to start and cry,
 "And then against my heart he set his sword, 1640
 "Swearing, unless I took all patiently,
 "I should not live to speak another word:
 "So should my shame still rest upon record,

" And never be forgot in mighty Rome,
 " Th' adult'rate death of Lucrece, and her groom.

" Mine enemy was strong, my poor self weak, 1645
 " (And far the weaker with so strong a fear)
 " My bloody judge forbad my tongue to speak;
 " No rightful plea might plead for justice there:
 " His scarlet lust came evidence to swear, 1650
 " That my poor beauty had purloin'd his eyes;
 " And when the judge is robb'd, the prisoner dies.

" O! teach me how to make mine own excuse,
 " Or, at the least, this refuge let me find;
 " Though my gross blood be stain'd with this abuse,
 " Immaculate and spotless is my mind: 1656
 " That was not forc'd, that never was inclin'd
 " To accessary yieldings: but still pure,
 " Doth in her poison'd closet yet endure."

Lo! here the hopeless merchant of this loss, 1660
 With head declin'd, and voice damm'd up with woe,
 With sad set eyes and wretched arms across,
 From lips new-waxen pale begins to blow
 The grief away, that stops his answer so,
 But wretched as he is, he strives in vain; 1665
 What he breathes out, his breath drinks up again.

As through an arch the violent roaring tide
 Out-runs the eye, that doth behold his haste;
 Yet in the eddie boundeth in his pride
 Back to the strait, that forc'd him on so fast, 1670
 In rage sent out, recall'd in rage being past:
 Even so his sighs, his sorrows make a saw,
 To push grief on, and back the same grief draw.

Which speechless woe of his, poor she attendeth,
 And his untimely frenzy thus awaketh: 1675
 " Dear Lord! thy sorrow to my sorrow lendeth
 " Another power, no flood by raining slacketh;
 " My woe too sensible, thy passion maketh
 " More feeling painful; let it then suffice
 " To drown one woe, one pair of weeping eyes. 1680

" And for my sake, when I might charm thee so,
 " For she, that was thy Lucrece—now attend me ;
 " Be suddenly revenged on my foe,
 " Thine, mine, his own ; suppose thou dost defend me
 " From what is past, the help that thou shalt lend me
 " Comes all too late ; yet let the traitor die ; 1686
 " For sparing justice feeds iniquity."

" But e'er I name him, you fair Lords," quoth she,
 Speaking to those, that came with Collatine,
 " Shall plight your honourable faiths to me, 1690
 " With swift pursuit to venge this wrong of mine :
 " For 'tis a meritorious fair design,
 " To chase injustice with revengeful arms ;
 " Knights by their oaths should right poor ladies harms.

At this request, with noble disposition, 1695
 Each present lord began to promise aid,
 As bound in knighthood to her imposition,
 Longing to hear the hateful foe bewray'd :
 But she that yet her sad task hath not said,
 The protestation stops. " O speak !" quoth she, 1700
 " How may this forced stain be wip'd from me ?"

" What is the quality of mine offence,
 " Being constrain'd with dreadful circumstance ?
 " May my pure mind with the foul act dispense,
 " My low declined honour to advance ? 1705
 " May any terms acquit me from this chance ?
 " The poison'd fountain clears itself again ;
 " And why not I from this compelled stain ?"

With this they all at once began to say,
 Her body's stain her mind untainted clears ; 1710
 While with a joyless smile she turns away
 The face, that map, which deep impressiion bears
 Of hard misfortune carved in with tears.

" No, no," quoth she, " no dame hereafter living,
 " By my excuse shall claim excuses giving." 1715

Here with a sigh, as if her heart would break, [says :
 She throws forth Tarquin's name. " He, he," she

THE RAPE OF LUCRECE.

129

But more than he, her poor tongue could not speak,
Till after many accents and delays,
Untimely breathings, sick and short assays, 1725
She utters this, "He, he, fair Lord, 'tis he
"That guides this hand to give this wound to me."

E'en here she sheathed in her harmless breast
A harmful knife, that hence her soul unsheathed;
That blow did bail it from the deep unrest 1725
Of that polluted prison where it breathed:
Her contrite sighs unto the clouds bequeathed
Her winged spirit, and thro' her wounds doth fly
Life's lasting date from cancel'd destiny.

Stone-still, astonish'd with this deadly deed, 1730
Stood Collatine and all his lordly crew,
Till Lucrece' father, that beholds her bleed,
Himself on herself slaughter'd body threw:
And from the purple fountain Brutus drew
The murd'rous knife, and as it left the place, 1735
Her blood in poor revenge held it in chase.

And bubbling from her breast, it doth divide
In two slow rivers, that the crimson blood
Circles her body in on every side,
Who like the late sack'd island vastly stood 1740
Bare and unpeopled in this fearful flood.
Some of her blood still pure and red remain'd,
And some look'd back, and that false Tarquin stain'd.

About the mourning and congealed face
Of that black blood, a watry rigol goes, 1745
Which seems to weep upon the tainted place;
And ever since, as pitying Lucrece' woes,
Corrupted blood some wat'ry token shows,
And blood untainted still doth red abide,
Blushing at that which is so putrify'd. 1750

"Daughter! dear daughter!" old Lucretius cries,
"That life was mine, which thou hast here depriv'd;
"If in the child the father's image lies,

- "Where shall I live, now Lucrece is unliv'd ?
 "Thou wast not to this end from me deriv'd. 1755
 "If children predecease progenitors,
 "We are their offspring, and they none of ours.
 "Poor broken glass ! I often did behold
 "In thy sweet semblance my old age new-born :
 "But now that fair fresh mirror, dim and old, 1760
 "Shews me a bare-bon'd death by time out-worn.
 "O ! from my cheeks my image thou hast torn !
 "And shiver'd all the beauty of my glass,
 "That I no more can see, what once I was.
 "O ! Time, cease thou thy course, and last no longer,
 "If they surcease to be, that should survive ; 1766
 "Shall rotten death make conquest of the stronger,
 "And leave the fault'ring feeble souls alive ?
 "The old bees die, the young possess the hive :
 "Then live sweet Lucrece, live again, and see, 1770
 "Thy father die, and not thy father thee."

By this starts Collatine, as from a dream,
 And bids Lucretius give his sorrow place ;
 And then in key-cold Lucrece' bleeding stream
 He falls, and bathes the pale fear in his face, 1775
 And counterfeits to die with her a space ;
 Till manly shame bids him possess his breath,
 And live to be revenged on her death.

The deep vexation of his inward soul
 Hath serv'd a dumb arrest upon his tongue : 1780
 Who mad that sorrow should his use control,
 Or keep him from heart-easing words so long
 Begins to talk ; but thro' his lips do throng
 Weak words, so thick come in his poor heart's aid,
 That no man could distinguish what he said. 1785

Yet sometime Tarquin was pronounced plain,
 But thro' his teeth, as if the name he tore,
 This windy tempest, till it blow up rain,
 Held back his sorrow's tide to make it more.
 At last it rains, and busy winds give o'er : 1790

Then son and father weep with equal strife,
Who would weep most for daughter, or for wife.

The one doth call her his, the other his ;
Yet neither may possess the claim they lay.
The father says " she's mine ;"—" O mine she is,"
Replies the husband ; " do not take away 1796
" My sorrow's interest ; let no mourner say,
" He weeps for her ; for she was only mine,
" And only must be wail'd by Collatine."

" O !" quoth Lucretius, " I did give that life, 1800
" Which she too early and too late hath spill'd."
" Woe ! woe !" quoth Collatine, " she was my wife,
" I owned her, and 'tis mine that she hath kill'd.
" My daughter and my wife with clamours fill'd
" The dispers'd air, who holding Lucrece' life, 1805
" Answer'd their cries, my daughter, and my wife."

Brutus, who pluck'd the knife from Lucrece' side,
Seeing such emulation in their woe,
Began to clothe his wit in state and pride,
Burying in Lucrece's wound his folly's shew : 1810
He with the Romans was esteemed so,
As silly jeering idiots are with kings,
For sportive words, and uttering foolish things.

But now he throws that shallow habit by,
Wherein deep policy did him disguise ; 1815
And arm'd his long-hid wits advisedly,
To check the tears in Collatinus' eyes.
" Thou wronged lord of Rome," quoth he, " arise ;
" Let my unfounded self, suppos'd a fool,
" Now set thy long-experienc'd wit to school. 1820

" Why Collatine, is woe the cure for woe ?
" Do wounds help wounds, or grief help grievous
" Is it revenge to give thyself a blow [deeds ?
" For his foul act, by whom thy fair wife bleeds ?
" Such childish humour from weak minds proceeds.
" Thy wretched wife mistook the matter so, 1825
" To slay herself, that should have slain her foe.

" Courageous Roman ! do not steep thy heart
 " In such relenting dew of lamentations ;
 " But kneel with me, and help to bear thy part, 1830
 " To rouse our Roman gods with invocations,
 " That they will suffer these abominations
 " (Since Rome herself in them doth stand disgrac'd)
 " By our strong arms from forth her fair streets chas'd.
 " Now by the capital that we adore ! 1835
 " And by this chaste blood so unjustly stain'd !
 " By heaven's fair sun, that breeds the fat earth's store !
 " By all our country's rites in Rome maintain'd,
 " And by chaste Lucrece' soul, that late complain'd
 " Her wrongs to us, and by this bloody knife ! 1840
 " We will revenge the death of this true wife."

This said, he struck his hand upon his breast,
 And kiss'd the fatal knife to end his vow ;
 And to his protestation urg'd the rest,
 Who wond'ring at him did him words allow : 1845
 Then jointly to the ground their knees they bow,
 And that deep vow which Brutus made before,
 He doth again repeat, and that they swore.

When they had sworn to this advised doom,
 They did conclude to bear dead Lucrece thence, 1850
 To shew the bleeding body throughout Rome,
 And so to publish Tarquin's foul offence,
 Which being done, with speedy diligence,
 The Roman's plausibly did give consent,
 To Tarquin's everlasting banishment. 1855



SONNETS.

TO THE ONLY BEGETTER OF THESE ENSUING SONNETS

MR. W. H.

ALL HAPPINESS

And that eternity promised by our ever-living Poet

WISHETH THE

WELL-WISHING ADVENTURER IN SETTING FORTH,

I.

T. T.*

FROM fairest creatures we desire increase,
That thereby beauty's rose might never die,
But as the ripper should by time decease,
His tender heir might bear his memory :
But thou, contracted to thine own bright eyes, 5
Feed'st thy light's flame with self-substantial fuel,
Making a famine where abundance lies,
Thyself thy foe, to thy sweet self too cruel.
Thou that art now the world's fresh ornament,
And only herald to the gaudy spring, 10
Within thine own bud buriest thy content,
And, tender churl, mak'st waste in niggarding.
Pity the world, or else this glutton be,
To eat the world's due, by the grave and thee.

II.

When forty winters shall besiege thy brow, 15
And dig deep trenches in thy beauty's field,
Thy youth's proud livery, so gaz'd on now,
Will be a tatter'd weed, of small worth held :
Then being ask'd where all thy beauty lies,
Where all the treasure of thy lusty days ; 20
To say, within thine own deep-funken eyes,
Were an all-eating shame, and thriftless praise.
How much more praise deserv'd thy beauty's use,
If thou could'st answer—" *This fair child of mine*
" *Shall sum my count, and make my old excuse—*" 25
Proving his beauty by succession thine.
This were to be new made when thou art old,
And see thy blood warm when thou feel'st it cold.

* J. E. Thomas Thorpe, in whose name the sonnets were first entered in Stationer's Hall.

III.

Look in thy glass, and tell the face thou viewest,
 Now is the time that face should form another ; 30
 Whose fresh repair if now thou not renewest,
 Thou dost beguile the world, unblest some mother.
 For where is she so fair, whose un-eard womb
 Disdains the tillage of thy husbandry ?
 Or who is he so fond, will be the tomb 35
 Of his self-love, to stop posterity ?
 Thou art thy mother's glass, and she in thee
 Calls back the lovely April of her prime :
 So thou thro' windows of thine age shalt see,
 Despite of wrinkles, this thy golden time. 40
 But if thou live, remember'd not to be,
 Die single, and thine image dies with thee.

IV.

Unthrifty loveliness, why dost thou spend
 Upon thyself thy beauty's legacy ?
 Nature's bequest gives nothing, but doth lend, 45
 And being frank, she lends to those are free.
 Then, beauteous niggard, why dost thou abuse
 The bounteous largeness given thee to give ?
 Profitless usurer, why dost thou use
 So great a sum of sums, yet canst not live ? 50
 For having traffic with thyself alone,
 Thou of thyself thy sweet self dost deceive.
 Then how, when nature calls thee to be gone,
 What acceptable audit canst thou leave ?
 Thy unus'd beauty must be tomb'd with thee, 55
 Which used, lives thy executor to be.

V.

Those hours, that with gentle work did frame,
 The lovely gaze where every eye doth dwell,
 Will play the tyrants to the very same,
 And that unfair which fairly doth excel ; 60
 For never-resting time leads summer on
 To hideous winter, and confounds him there ;
 Sap check'd with frost, and lustry leaves quite gone,
 Beauty o'ersnow'd, and bareness every where :
 Then, were not summer's distillation left, 65

A liquid prisoner pent in walls of glass,
 Beauty's effect with beauty were bereft,
 Nor it, nor no remembrance what it was.
 But flowers distill'd, though they with winter meet, 69
 Leese but their shew; their substance still lives sweet.

VI.

Then let not winter's ragged hand deface
 In thee thy summer, e'er thou be distill'd:
 Make sweet some phial, treasure thou some place
 With beauty's treasure, e'er it be self-kill'd.
 That use it not-forbidden usury, 75
 Which happies those that pay the willing loan;
 That's for thyself to breed another thee,
 Or ten times happier, be it ten for one;
 Ten times thyself were happier than thou art,
 If ten of thine ten times refigur'd thee: 80
 Then, what could death do if thou should'st depart,
 Leaving thee living in posterity?
 Be not self-will'd, for thou art much too fair
 To be death's conquest, and make worms thine heir.

VII.

Lo in the orient when the gracious light 85
 Lifts up his burning head, each under eye
 Doth homage to his new-appearing sight,
 Serving with looks his sacred majesty;
 And having climb'd the steep-up heavenly hill,
 Resembling strong youth in his middle age, 90
 Yet mortal looks adore his beauty still,
 Attending on his golden pilgrimage;
 But when from high-moost pitch, with weary car,
 Like feeble age, he reeleth from the day,
 The eyes, fore duteous, now converted are 95
 From his low tract, and look another way:
 So thou, thyself out-going in thy noon,
 Unlook'd on die'st, unless thou get a son.

VIII.

Musick to hear, why hear'st thou musick sadly?
 Sweets with sweets war not, joy delights in joy. 100
 Why lov'st thou that which thou receiv'st not gladly?
 Or else receiv'st with pleasure thine annoy?

If the true concord of well-tuned sounds,
 By unions married, do offend thine ear,
 They do but sweetly chide thee, who confounds 105
 In singleness the parts that thou should'st bear.
 Mark how one string, sweet husband to another,
 Strikes each in each by mutual ordering;
 Resembling fire and child and happy mother,
 Who all in one, one pleasing note do sing: 110
 Who speechless song, being many, seeming one,
 Sings this to thee, "thou single wilt prove none."

IX.

Is it for fear to wet a widow's eye,
 That thou consum'st thyself in single life?
 Ah! if thou issueless shalt hap to die, 115
 The world will wail thee, like a makeless wife;
 'The world will be thy widow and still weep,
 That thou no form of thee hast left behind,
 When every private widow well may keep,
 By children's eyes, her husband's shape in mind: 120
 Look, what an unthrif in the world doth spend,
 Shifts but his place, for still the world enjoys it;
 But beauty's waste hath in the world an end,
 And keep unus'd, the user so destroys it.
 No love towards others in that bosom sits, 125
 That on himself such murderous shame commits.

X.

For shame! deny that thou bear'st love to any,
 Who for thyself art so unprovident.
 Grant if thou wilt, thou art lov'd of many,
 But that thou none lov'st, is most evident: 130
 For thou art so possessed with murderous hate,
 That 'gainst thyself thou stick'st not to conspire,
 Seeking that beauteous roof to ruinate,
 Which to repair should be thy chief desire.
 O change thy thought, that I may change my mind!
 Shall hate be fairer lodg'd than gentle love; 136
 Be, as thy presence is, gracious and kind,
 Or to thyself, at least, kind-hearted prove:
 Make thee another self, for love of me.
 That beauty still may live in thine or thee. 140

XI.

As fast as thou shalt wane, so fast thou grow'st
 In one of thine, from that which thou departest;
 And that fresh blood which youngly thou bestow'st,
 Thou may'st call thine, when thou from youth convertest.
 Herein lives wisdom, beauty, and increase; 145
 Without this, folly, age, and cold decay:
 If all were minded so, the times should cease,
 And threescore years would make the world away.
 Let those whom nature hath not made for store,
 Harsh, featureless, and rude, barrenly perish: 150
 Look whom she best endow'd, she gave thee more;
 Which bounteous gift thou should'st in bounty cherish:
 She carv'd thee for her seal, and meant thereby,
 Thou should'st print more, nor let that copy die.

XII.

When I do count the clock that tells the time, 155
 And see the brave day sunk in hideous night;
 When I behold the violet past prime,
 And sable curls, all silver'd o'er with white;
 When lofty trees I see barren of leaves,
 Which erst from heat did canopy the herd, 160
 And summer's green all girded up in sheaves,
 Borne on the bier with white and bristly beard;
 Then of thy beauty do I question make,
 That thou among the wastes of time must go,
 Since sweets and beauties do themselves forsake, 165
 And die as fast as they see others grow;
 And nothing 'gainst time's scythe can make defence,
 Save breed, to brave him, when he takes thee hence.

XIII.

O that you were yourself! but, love, you are
 No longer your's than you yourself here live: 170
 Against this coming end you should prepare,
 And your sweet semblance to some other give.
 So should that beauty which you hold in lease,
 Find no determination: then you were
 Yourself again, after yourself's decease, 175
 When your sweet issue your sweet form should bear.
 Who lets so fair a house fall to decay,

Which husbandry in honour might uphold.
 Against the stormy gusts of winter's day,
 And barren rage of death's eternal cold? 180
 O! none but unthrifts:—Dear my love, you know
 You had a father; let your son say so.

XIV.

Not from the stars do I my judgment pluck;
 And yet methinks I have astronomy,
 But not to tell of good, or evil luck, 185
 Of plagues, of dearths, or seasons' quality:
 Nor can I fortune to brief minutes tell,
 Pointing to each his thunder, rain and wind;
 Or say, with princes if it shall go well,
 By oft predict that I in heaven find. 190
 But from thine eyes my knowledge I derive,
 And (constant stars) in them I read such art,
 As truth and beauty shall together thrive,
 If from thyself to store thou would'st convert:
 Or else of thee this I prognosticate, 195
 Thy end is truth's and beauty's doom and date.

XV.

When I consider every thing that grows
 Holds in perfection but a little moment,
 That this huge state presenteth nought but shows
 Whereon the stars in secret influence comment: 200
 When I perceive that men as plants increase,
 Cheered and check'd even by the self-same sky;
 Vaunt in their youthful sap, at height decrease,
 And wear their brave state out of memory;
 Then the conceit of his inconstant stay 205
 Sets you most rich in youth before my sight,
 Where wasteful time debareth with decay,
 To change your day of youth to sullied night;
 And, all in war with time, for love of you,
 As he takes from you, I engraft you new. 210

XVI.

But wherefore do not you a mightier way
 Make war upon this bloody tyrant, Time?
 And fortify yourself in your decay
 With means more blessed than my barren rhyme?

SONNETS.

139
215

Now stand you on the top of happy hours ;
And many maiden gardens yet unset,
With virtuous wish would bear you living flowers,
Much liker than your painted counterfeit ;
So should the lines of life that life repair,
Which this, Time's pencil, or my pupil pen, 220
Neither in inward worth, nor outward fair,
Can make you live yourself in eyes of men.
To give away yourself, keeps yourself still ;
And you must live, drawn by your own sweet skill.

XVII.

Who will believe my verse in time to come, 225
If it were fill'd with your most high deserts ?
Though yet heaven knows, it is but as a tomb
Which hides your life, and shews not half your parts.
If I could write the beauty of your eyes,
And in fresh numbers number all your graces, 230
The age to come would say this poet lies,
Such heavenly touches ne'er touch'd earthly faces.
So should my paper, yellowed with their age,
Bescorn'd, like old men of less truth than tongue ;
And your true rights be term'd a poet's rage, 235
And stretched metre of an antique song :
But were some child of yours alive that time,
You should live twice ;—in it, and in my rhyme.

XVIII.

Shall I compare thee to a summer's day ?
Thou art more lovely and more temperate : 240
Rough winds do shake the darling buds of May,
And summer's lease hath all too short a date :
Sometime too hot the eye of heaven shines,
And often is his gold complexion dimm'd ;
And every fair from fair sometime declines, 245
By chance, or nature's changing course untrimm'd ;
But thy eternal summer shall not fade,
Nor lose possession of that fair thou owest ;
Nor shall death brag thou wander'st in his shade,
When in eternal lines to time thou growest : 250
So long as men can breathe, or eyes can see,
So long lives this, and this gives life to thee.

XIX.

Devouring Time, blunt thou the lion's paws,
 And make the earth devour her own sweet brood;
 Pluck the keen teeth from the fierce tiger's jaws, 255
 And burn the long-liv'd phoenix in her blood;
 Make glad and sorry seasons as thou fleet'st,
 And do whate'er thou wilt, swift-footed Time,
 To the wide world, and all her fading sweets;
 But I forbid thee one most heinous crime: 260
 O carve not with thy hours my love's fair brow,
 Nor draw no lines there with thine antique pen;
 Him in thy course untainted do allow,
 For beauty's pattern to succeeding men.
 Yet, do thy worst, old Time: despite thy wrong, 265
 My love shall in my verse ever live young.

XX.

A woman's face, with nature's own hand painted,
 Hast thou, the master-mistress of my passion;
 A woman's gentle heart, but not acquainted
 With shifting change, as is false women's fashion; 270
 An eye more bright than theirs, less false in rolling,
 Gilding the object whereupon it gazeth;
 A man in hue, all hues in his controlling,
 Which steals men's eyes, and women's souls amazeth.
 And for a woman wert thou first created; 275
 Till nature, as she wrought thee, fell a-doting,
 And by addition me of thee defeated,
 By adding one thing to my purpose nothing.
 But since she prick'd thee out for women's pleasure,
 Mine be thy love, and thy love's use their treasure. 280

XXI.

So it is not with me as with that muse,
 Stirr'd by a painted beauty to his verse;
 Who heaven itself for ornament doth use,
 And every fair with his fair doth rehearse;
 Making a couplement of proud compare, 285
 With sun and moon, with earth and sea's rich gems,
 With April's first-born flowers, and all things rare
 That heaven's air in this huge rondure hems.
 O let me, true in love, but truly write,

SONNETS.

141

And then believe me, my love is as fair
 As any mother's child, though not so bright
 As those gold candles fix'd in heaven's air:
 Let them say more that like of hear-say well;
 I will not praise, that purpose not to sell.

290

XXII.

My glass shall not persuade me I am old,
 So long as youth and thou art of one date;
 But when in thee time's furrows I behold,
 Then look I death my days should expiate.
 For all that beauty that doth cover thee,
 Is but the seemly raiment of my heart,
 Which in thy breast doth live, as thine in me;
 How can I then be elder than thou art?
 O therefore, love, be of thyself so wary,
 As I not for myself but for thee will;
 Bearing thy heart, which I will keep so chary
 As tender nurse her babe from faring ill.
 Presume not on thy heart when mine is slain;
 Thou gav'st me thine, not to give back again.

295

300

305

XXIII.

As an imperfect actor on the stage,
 Who with his fear is put beside his part,
 Or some fierce thing replete with too much rage,
 Whose strength's abundance weakens his own heart;
 So I, for fear of trust, forget to say
 The perfect ceremony of love's rite,
 And in mine own love's strength seem to decay,
 O'er-charg'd with burden of mine own love's might.
 O let my books be then my eloquence
 And dumb presagers of my speaking breast;
 Who plead for love, and look for recompence,
 More than that tongue that more hath more express'd.
 O learn to read what silent love hath writ:
 To hear with eyes belongs to love's fine wit.

310

315

321

XXIV.

Mine eye hath play'd the painter, and hath steel'd
 Thy beauty's form in table of my heart;
 My body is the frame wherein 'tis held,
 And perspective it is best painter's art.

325

For through the painter must you see his skill,
 To find where your poor image painted lies,
 Which in my bosom's shop is hanging still,
 That hath his windows glazed with thine eyes. 330
 Now see what good turns eyes for eyes have done;
 Mine eyes have drawn thy shape, and thine for me
 Are windows to my breast, where-through the sun
 Delights to peep, to gaze therein on thee;
 Yet eyes this cunning want to grace their art, 335
 They draw but what they see, know not the heart.

XXV.

Let those who are in favour with their stars,
 Of public honour and proud titles boast,
 Whilst I, whom fortune of such triumph bars,
 Unlook'd for joy in that I honour'd most. 340
 Great princes favourites their fair leaves spread,
 But as the marigold at the sun's eye;
 And in themselves their pride lies buried,
 For at a frown they in their glory die.
 The painful warrior famoused for fight, 345
 After a thousand victories once foil'd,
 Is from the book of honour razed quite,
 And all the rest forgot for which he toil'd.
 Then happy I, that love and am belov'd,
 Where I may not remove, nor be removed. 350

XXVI.

Lord of my love, to whom in vassalage
 Thy merit hath my duty strongly knit,
 To thee I send this written embassage,
 To witness duty, not to shew my wit.
 Duty so great, which wit so pure as mine 355
 May make seem bare, in wanting words to shew it;
 But that I hope some good conceit of thine
 In thy soul's thought, all naked will bestow it;
 Till whatsoever star that guides my moving,
 Points on me graciously with fair aspect, 360
 And puts apparel on my tender loving,
 To shew me worthy of thy sweet respect.
 Then may I dare to boast how I do love thee,
 Till then, not shew my head where thou may'st prove me.

SONNETS.

143

XXVII.

Weary with toil, I haste me to my bed,
 The dear repose for limbs with travel tired;
 But then begins a journey in my head,
 To work my mind, when body's work's expired:
 For then my thoughts (from far where I abide)
 Intend a zealous pilgrimage to thee,
 And keep my drooping eye-lids open wide,
 Looking on darkness which the blind doth see.
 Save that my soul's imaginary sight
 Presents thy shadow to my sightless view,
 Which, like a jewel hung in ghastly night,
 Makes black night beauteous, and her old face new.
 Lo thus by day my limbs, by night my mind,
 For thee, and for myself, no quiet find.

XXVIII.

How can I then return in happy plight,
 That am debarr'd the benefit of rest?
 When day's oppression is not eas'd by night,
 But day by night and night by day oppress'd?
 And each, tho' enemies to either's reign,
 Do in consent shake hands to torture me,
 The one by toil, the other to complain
 How far I toil, still farther off from thee.
 I tell the day, to please him, thou art bright,
 And dost him grace when clouds do blot the heaven:
 So flatter I the swart-complexion'd night;
 When sparkling stars twine not, thou gild'st the even.
 But day doth daily draw my sorrows longer, [ger.
 And night doth nightly make grief's length seem stron-

XXIX.

When in disgrace with fortune and men's eyes,
 I all alone beweep my out-cast state,
 And trouble deaf heaven with my bootless cries,
 And look upon myself, and curse my fate,
 Wishing me like to one more rich in hope,
 Featur'd like him, like him with friends possess'd,
 Desiring this man's art, and that man's scope,
 With what I most enjoy contented least:
 Yet in these thoughts myself almost despising,

Haply I think on thee,—and then my state
 (Like to the lark at break of day arising
 From fullen earth) sings hymns at heaven's gate ; 404
 For thy sweet love remember'd, such wealth brings,
 That then I scorn to change my state with kings.

XXX.

When to the sessions of sweet silent thought
 I summon up remembrance of things past,
 I sigh the lack of many a thing I sought, 409
 And with old woes new wail my dear time's waste :
 Then can I drown an eye, unus'd to flow,
 For precious friends hid in death's dateless night,
 And weep afresh love's long-since-cancell'd woe,
 And moan the expence of many a vanish'd sight.
 Then can I grieve at grievances foregone, 415
 And heavily from woe to woe tell o'er
 The sad account of fore-bemoaned moan,
 Which I new pay as if not paid before.
 But if the while I think on thee, dear friend,
 All losses are restor'd, and sorrows end. 420

XXXI.

Thy bosom is endeared with all hearts,
 Which I by lacking have supposed dead ;
 And there reigns love and all love's loving parts,
 And all those friends which I thought buried.
 How many a holy and obsequious tear 425
 Hath dear religious love stolen from mine eye,
 As interest of the dead, which now appear
 But things remov'd, that hidden in thee lie !
 Thou art the grave where buried love doth live,
 Hung with the trophies of my lovers gone, 430
 Who all their parts of me to thee did give ;
 That due of many now is thine alone :
 Their images I lov'd I view in thee,
 And thou (all they) hast all the all of me.

XXXII.

If thou survive my well-contented day, 435
 When that churl death my bones with dust shall cover,
 And shalt by fortune once more re-survey
 These poor rude lines of thy deceased lover,

SONNETS.

145

Compare them with the bettering of the time ;
 And tho' they be out-stripp'd by every pen,
 Reserve them for my love, not for their rhyme,
 Exceeded by the height of happier men.
 O then vouchsafe me but this loving thought !
Had my friend's muse grown with this growing age
A dearer birth than this his love had brought,
 To march in ranks of better equipage :
But since he died, and poets better prove,
Theirs for their style I'll read, his for his love.

445

XXXIII.

Full many a glorious morning have I seen
 Flatter the mountain tops with sovereign eye,
 Kissing with golden face the meadows green,
 Gilding pale streams with heavenly alchymy ;
 Anon permit the basest clouds to ride
 With ugly rack on his celestial face,
 And from the forlorn world his visage hide,
 Stealing unseen to west with this disgrace :
 E'en so my sun one early morn did shine,
 With all triumphant splendour on my brow ;
 But out ! alack ! he was but one hour mine,
 The region cloud hath mask'd him from me now,
 Yet him for this my love no whit disdaineth ;
 Suns of the world may stain, when heaven's sun staineth.

450

455

XXXIV.

Why didst thou promise such a beauteous day,
 And make me travel forth without my cloak,
 To let base clouds o'er-take me in my way,
 Hiding thy bravery in their rotten smoke ?
 'Tis not enough that thro' the cloud thou break,
 To dry the rain on my storm-beaten face,
 For no man well of such a salve can speak,
 That heals the wound, and cures not the disgrace :
 Nor can thy shame give physic to my grief ;
 Tho' thou repent, yet I have still the loss :
 The offender's sorrow lends but weak relief
 To him that bears the strong offence's cross.
 Ah ! but those tears are pearl which thy love sheds,
 And they are rich, and ransom all ill deeds.

465

471

476

XXXV.

No more be griev'd at that which thou hast done :
 Roses have thorns, and silver fountains mud :
 Clouds and eclipses stain both moon and sun,
 And loathsome canker lives in sweetest bud. 480
 All men make faults, and even I in this,
 Authorising thy trespasss with compare,
 Myself corrupting, salving thy amiss,
 Excusing thy sins more than thy sins are :
 For to thy sensual fault I bring in sense, 485
 (Thy adverse party is thy advocate,)
 And 'gainst myself a lawful plea commence :
 Such civil war is in my love and hate,
 That I am accessary needs must be
 To that sweet thief, which sourly robs from me. 490

XXXVI.

Let me confess that we two must be twain,
 Altho' our undivided loves are one :
 So shall those blots that do with me remain,
 Without thy help, by me be borne alone, 495
 In our two loves there is but one respect,
 Tho' in our lives a separable spite,
 Which tho' it alter not love's sole effect,
 Yet doth it steal sweet hours from love's delight.
 I may not evermore acknowledge thee,
 Lest my bewailed guilt should do the shame ; 500
 Nor thou with public kindness honour me,
 Unless thou take that honour from thy name :
 But do not so ; I love thee in such sort,
 As thou being mine, mine is thy good report.

XXXVII.

As a decrepid father takes delight 505
 To see his active child do deeds of youth,
 So I, made lame by fortune's dearest spite,
 Take all my comfort of thy worth and truth ;
 For whether beauty, birth, or wealth, or wit,
 Or any of these all, of all, or more, 510
 Entitled in thy parts do crowned sit,
 I make my love engrafted to this store :
 So then I am not lame, poor, nor despis'd,

SONNETS.

147

Whilst that this shadow doth such substance give,
 That I in thy abundance am suffic'd,
 And by a part of all thy glory live.
 Look what is best, that best I wish in thee;
 This wish I have; then ten times happy me!

515

XXXVIII.

How can my muse want subject to invent,
 While thou dost breathe, that pour'st into my verse
 Thine own sweet argument, too excellent
 For every vulgar paper to rehearse?
 Oh give thyself the thanks, if aught in me
 Worthy perusal, stand against thy sight,
 For who's so dumb that cannot write to thee,
 When thou thyself dost give invention light?
 Be thou the tenth muse, ten times more in worth
 Than those old nine, which rhymers invoke;
 And he that calls on thee, let him bring forth
 Eternal numbers to out-live long date.
 If my slight muse do please these curious days,
 The pain be mine, but thine shall be the praise.

521

525

530

XXXIX.

O how thy worth with manners may I sing,
 When thou art all the better part of me?
 What can mine own praise to mine own self bring?
 And what is't but mine own, when I praise thee?
 Even for this let us divided live,
 And our dear love lose name of single one,
 That by this separation I may give
 That due to thee, which thou deserv'st alone.
 O absence, what a torment would'st thou prove,
 Were it not thy four leisure gave sweet leave
 To entertain the time with thoughts of love,
 Which time and thoughts so sweetly doth deceive,
 And that thou teachest how to make one twain,
 By praising him here, who doth hence remain.

534

540

545

XL.

Take all my loves, my love, yea, take them all;
 What hast thou then more than thou hadst before?
 No love, my love, that thou may'st true love call;
 All mine was thine, before thou hadst this more.

550

Then if for my love thou my love receivest,
 I cannot blame thee, for my love thou usest ;
 But yet be blam'd, if thou thyself deceivest
 By wilful taste of what thyself refusest.
 I do forgive thy robbery, gentle thief, 555
 Altho' thou steal thee all my poverty ;
 And yet love knows, it is a greater grief
 To bear love's wrong, than hate's known injury.
 Lascivious grace, in whom all ill well shews,
 Kill me with spites ; yet we must not be foes. 560

XLI.

Those pretty wrongs that liberty commits,
 When I am sometime absent from thy heart,
 Thy beauty and thy years full well besits,
 For still temptation follows where thou art.
 Gentle thou art, and therefore to be won, 565
 Beauteous thou art, therefore to be assail'd ;
 And when a woman woos, what woman's son
 Will sourly leave her till she have prevail'd ?
 Ah me ! but yet thou might'st, my sweet forbear,
 And chide thy beauty and thy straying youth, 570
 Who lead thee in their riot even there
 Where thou art forc'd to break a two-fold truth ;
 Her's, by thy beauty tempting her to thee,
 Thine, by thy beauty being false to me.

XLII.

That thou hast her, it is not all my grief, 575
 And yet it may be said I lov'd her dearly ;
 That she hath thee, is of my wailing chief
 A loss in love that touches me more nearly.
 Loving offenders, thus I will excuse ye :—
 Thou dost love her, because thou know'st I love her ;
 And for my sake even so doth she abuse me, 581
 Suffering my friend for my sake to approve her.
 If I lose thee, my loss is my love's gain,
 And losing her, my friend hath found that loss ;
 Both find each other, and I lose both twain, 585
 And both for my sake lay on me this cross :
 But here's the joy ; my friend and I are one ;
 Sweet flattery !—then she loves but me alone.

XLIII.

When most I wink, then do mine eyes best see,
 For all the day they view things unrespected ; 590
 But when I sleep, in dreams they look on thee,
 And darkly bright, are bright in dark directed,
 Then thou, whose shadow shadows doth make bright,
 How would thy shadow's form form happy shew
 To the clear day with thy much clearer light, 595
 When to unseeing eyes thy shade shines so ?
 How would (I say) mine eyes be blessed made
 By looking on thee in the living day,
 When in dead night thy fair imperfect shade
 Thro' heavy sleep on sightless eyes doth stay ? 600
 All days are nights to see, till I see thee, [me.
 And nights, bright days, when dreams do shew thee

XLIV.

If the dull substance of my flesh were thought,
 Injurious distance should not stop my way ;
 For then, despite of space, I would be brought 605
 From limits far remote, where thou dost stay.
 No matter then, altho' my foot did stand
 Upon the farthest earth remov'd from thee,
 For nimble thought can jump both sea and land,
 As soon as think the place where he would be. 610
 But ah ! thought kills me, that I am not thought,
 To leap large lengths of miles when thou art gone,
 But that, so much of earth and water wrought,
 I must attend time's leisure with my moan ;
 Receiving nought by elements so slow 615
 But heavy tears, badges of either's woe.

XLV.

The other two, slight air and purging fire,
 Are both with thee, wherever I abide ;
 The first my thought, the other my desire,
 These present-absent with swift motion slide. 620
 For when these quicker elements are gone
 In tender embassy of love to thee,
 My life being made of four, with two alone,
 Sinks down to death, oppress'd with melancholy ;
 Until life's composition be re-cured 625

By those swift messengers return'd from thee,
 Who e'en but now come back again, assured
 Of thy fair health, recounting it to me :
 This told, I joy ; but then no longer glad,
 I send them back again, and straight grow sad. 630

XLVI.

Mine eye and heart are at a mortal war,
 How to divide the conquest of thy fight ;
 Mine eye my heart thy picture's sight would bar,
 Mine heart mine eye the freedom of that right.
 My heart doth plead, that thou in him dost lie, 635
 (A closet never pierc'd with crystal eyes,)
 But the defendant doth that plea deny,
 And says in him thy fair appearance lies.
 To 'cide this title is impannelled
 A quest of thoughts, all tenants to the heart ; 640
 And by their verdict is determined
 The clear eye's moiety, and the dear heart's part :
 As thus ; mine eye's due is thy outward part,
 And my heart's right thy inward love of heart.

XLVII.

Betwixt mine eye and heart a league is took, 645
 And each doth good turns now unto the other :
 When that mine eye is famish'd for a look,
 Or heart in love with sighs himself doth smother,
 With my love's picture then my eye doth feast,
 And to the painted banquet bids my heart : 650
 Another time mine eye is my heart's guest,
 And in his thoughts of love doth share a part :
 So, either by thy picture or my love,
 Thyself away art present still with me ;
 For thou not farther than my thoughts canst move, 655
 And I am still with them, and they with thee ;
 Or if they sleep, thy picture in my sight
 Awakes my heart to heart's and eye's delight.

XLVIII.

How careful was I when I took my way,
 Each trifle under truest bars to thrust, 660
 That, to my use, it might unused stay
 From hands of falsehood, in sure wards of trust

But thou, to whom my jewels trifles are,
 Most worthy comfort, now my greatest grief,
 Thou, best of dearest, and mine only care, 665
 Art left the prey of every vulgar thief.
 Thee have I not lock'd up in any chest,
 Save where thou art not, tho' I feel thou art,
 Within the gentle closure of my breast,
 From whence at pleasure thou may'st come and part ;
 And even thence thou wilt be stolen I fear, 671
 For truth proves thievish for a prize so dear.

XLIX.

Against that time, if ever that time come,
 When I shall see thee frown on my defects,
 When as thy love hath cast his utmost sum 675
 Call'd to that audit by advis'd respects,
 Against that time, when thou shalt strangely pass,
 And scarcely greet me with that sun, thine eye,
 When love, converted from the thing it was,
 Shall reasons find of settled gravity, 680
 Against that time do I ensconce me here
 Within the knowledge of mine own desert,
 And this my hand against myself uprear,
 To guard the lawful reasons on thy part :
 To leave poor me thou hast the strength of laws, 685
 Since, why to love, I can alledge no cause.

L.

How heavy do I journey on the way,
 When what I seek,—my weary travel's end,—
 Doth teach that ease and that repose to say,
 Thus far the miles are measur'd from thy friend 690
 The beast that bears me, tired with my woe,
 Plods dully on, to bear that weight in me,
 As if by some instinct the wretch did know
 His rider lov'd not speed, being made from thee :
 The bloody spur cannot provoke him on 695
 That sometimes anger thrusts into his hide,
 Which heavily he answers with a groan,
 More sharp to me than spurring to his side ;
 For that same groan doth put this in my mind,
 My grief lies onward, and my joy behind. 700

LI.

Thus can my love excuse the slow offence
Of my dull bearer, when from thee I speed :
From where thou art why should I haste me hence ?
Till I return, of posting is no need.

O, what excuse will my poor beast then find, 705
When swift extremity can seem but slow ?

Then should I spur, tho' mounted on the wind ;

In winged speed no motion shall I know ;

Then can no horse with my desire keep pace ;

Therefore desire, of perfect love being made, 710

Shall neigh, (no dull flesh) in his fiery race ;

But love, for love, thus shall excuse my jade ;

Since from thee going he went wilful slow,

Towards thee I will run, and give him leave to go.

LII.

So am I as the rich, whose blessed key 715

Can bring him to his sweet up-locked treasure,

The which he will not every hour survey,

For blunting the fine point of seldom pleasure.

Therefore are feasts so solemn and so rare,

Since seldom coming, in the long year set, 720

Like stones of worth they thinly placed are,

Or captain jewels in the carcanet.

So is the time that keeps you, as my chest,

Or as the wardrobe which the robe doth hide,

To make some special instant special-blest, 725

By new unfolding his imprison'd pride.

Blessed are you, whose worthiness gives scope,

Being had, to triumph, being lack'd, to hope.

LIII.

What is your substance, whereof are you made,

That millions of strange shadows on you tend ? 730

Since every one hath, every one, one shade,

And you, but one, can every shadow lend.

Describe Adonis, and the counterfeit

Is poorly imitated after you ;

On Helen's cheek all art of beauty set, 735

And you in Grecian tires are painted new :

Speak of the spring, and foison of the year ;

The one doth shadow of your beauty shew,
 The other as your bounty doth appear,
 And you in every blessed shape we know 740
 In all external grace you have some part,
 But you like none, none you, for constant heart.

LIV.

O how much more doth beauty beauteous seem,
 By that sweet ornament which truth doth give!
 The rose looks fair, but fairer we it deem 745
 For that sweet odour which doth in it live.
 The canker-blooms have full as deep a dye,
 As the perfumed tincture of the roses,
 Hang on such thorns and play as wantonly
 When summer's breath their masked buds discloses :
 But, for their virtue only is their shew, 751
 They live unwoo'd and unrespected fade ;
 Die to themselves. Sweet roses do not so ;
 Of their sweet deaths are sweetest odours made :
 And so of you, beauteous and lovely youth, 755
 When that shall fade, my verse distills your truth.

LV.

Not marble, nor the gilded monuments
 Of princes, shall out-live this powerful rhyme ;
 But you shall shine more bright in these contents
 Than unswept stone, besmear'd with sluttish time. 760
 When wasteful war shall statues overturn,
 And broils root out the work of masonry,
 Nor Mars's sword nor war's quick fire shall burn
 The living record of your memory.
 'Gainst death and all oblivious enmity 765
 Shall you pace forth ; your praise shall still find room,
 Even in the eyes of all posterity
 That wear this world out to the ending doom.
 So till the judgment that yourself arise,
 You live in this, and dwell in lovers' eyes. 770

LVI.

Sweet love, renew thy force ; be it not said,
 Thy edge should blunter be than appetite,
 Which but to-day by feeding is allay'd,
 To-morrow sharpen'd in his former might :

So, love, be thou ; altho' to-day thou fill 775
 Thy hungry eyes, e'en till they wink with fullness,
 To-morrow see again, and do not kill
 The spirit of love with a perpetual dulness:
 Let this sad interim like the ocean be
 Which parts the shore, where two contracted-new 780
 Come daily to the banks, that, when they see
 Return of love, more blest may be the view :
 Or call it winter, which being full of care,
 Makes summer's welcome thrice more wish'd, more rare.

LVII.

Being your slave, what should I do but tend 785
 Upon the hours and times of your desire ?
 I have no precious time at all to spend,
 Nor services to do, till you require.
 Nor dare I chide the world without-end hour,
 Whilst I, my sovereign, watch the clock for you, 790
 Nor think the bitterness of absence sour,
 When you have bid your servant once adieu ;
 Nor dare I question with my jealous thought,
 Where you may be, or your affairs suppose,
 But, like a sad slave, stay and think of nought, 795
 Save, where you are how happy you make those :
 So true a fool is love, that in your will
 (Tho' you do any thing) he thinks no ill.

LVIII.

That God forbid, that made me first your slave, 800
 I should in thought control your times of pleasure,
 Or at your hand the account of hours to crave,
 Being your vassal, bound to stay your leisure !
 Oh let me suffer (being at your beck)
 The imprison'd absence of your liberty,
 And patience, tame to sufferance, bid each check 805
 Without accusing you of injury.
 Be where you list ; your charter is so strong,
 That you yourself may privilege your time :
 Do what you will, to you it doth belong
 Yourself to pardon of self-doing crime, 810
 I am to wait, tho' waiting so be hell ;
 Not blame your pleasure, be it ill or well.

LIX.

If there be nothing new, but that, which is,
 Hath been before, how are our brains beguil'd,
 Which labouring for invention bear amiss 815
 The second burden of a former child ?
 O that record could with a backward look,
 Even of five hundred courses of the sun,
 Shew me your image in some antique book,
 Since mind at first in character was done ! 820
 That I might see what the old world could say
 To this compos'd wonder of your frame ;
 Whether we are mended, or whe'r better they,
 Or whether revolution be the same.
 O ! sure I am, the wits of former days 825
 To subjects worse have given admiring praise.

LX.

Like as the waves make towards the pebbled shore,
 So do our minutes hasten to their end ;
 Each changing place with that which goes before,
 In sequent toil all forwards do contend. 830
 Nativity once in the main of light,
 Crawls to maturity, wherewith being crown'd,
 Crooked eclipses 'gainst his glory fight,
 And time that gave, doth now his gift confound.
 Time doth transfix the flourish set on youth, 835
 And delves the parallels in beauty's brow ;
 Feeds on the rarities of nature's truth,
 And nothing stands but for his scythe to mow.
 And yet, to times in hope, my verse shall stand,
 Praising thy worth, despite his cruel hand. 840

LXI.

Is it thy will, thy image should keep open
 My heavy eye-lids to the weary night ?
 Dost thou desire my slumbers should be broken,
 While shadows like to thee, do mock my sight ?
 Is it thy spirit that thou send'st from thee 845
 So far from home, into my deeds to pry ;
 To find out shames and idle hours in me,
 The scope and tenor of thy jealousy ?
 O no ! thy love, tho' much, is not so great ;

It is my love that keeps mine eyes awake ; 850
 Mine own true love that doth my rest defeat,
 To play the watchman ever for thy sake :
 For thee watch I, whilst thou dost wake elsewhere,
 From me far off, with others all-too-near.

LXII.

Sin of self-love possesseth all mine eye, 855
 And all my soul, and all my every part ;
 And for this sin there is no remedy,
 It is so grounded inward in my heart.
 Methinks no face so gracious is as mine,
 No shape so true, no truth of such account, 860
 And for myself mine own worth do define,
 As I all other in all worths surmount.
 But when my glass shews me myself indeed,
 'Bated and chopp'd with tann'd antiquity,
 Mine own self-love quite contrary I read, 865
 Self so self-loving were iniquity.
 'Tis thee (myself) that for myself I praise,
 Painting my age with beauty of thy days.

LXIII.

Against my love shall be, as I am now,
 With time's injurious hand crush'd and o'erworn ; 870
 When hours have drain'd his blood, and fill'd his brow
 With lines and wrinkles ; when his youthful morn
 Hath travell'd on to age's steepy night ;
 And all those beauties, whereof now he's king,
 Are vanishing or vanish'd out of sight, 875
 Stealing away the treasure of his spring ;
 For such a time do I now fortify
 Against confounding age's cruel knife,
 That he shall never cut from memory
 My sweet love's beauty, tho' my lover's life. 880
 His beauty shall in these black lines be seen,
 And they shall live, and he in them still green.

LXIV.

When I have seen by Time's fell hand defac'd
 The rich-proud coast of out-worn bury'd age ;
 When sometime lofty towers I see down-raz'd, 885
 And brass eternal slave to mortal rage ;

When I have seen the hungry ocean gain
 Advantage on the kingdom of the shore,
 And the firm soil win of the wat'ry main,
 Increasing store with loss, and loss with store; 890
 When I have seen such interchange of state,
 Or state itself confounded to decay;
 Ruin hath taught me thus to ruminat—
 That Time will come and take my love away.
 This thought is as a death, which cannot choose 895
 But weep to have that which it fears to lose.

LXV.

Since brass, nor stone, nor earth, nor boundless sea,
 But sad mortality o'erflows their power,
 How with this rage shall beauty hold a plea,
 Whose action is no stronger than a flower? 900
 O how shall summer's honey breath hold out
 Against the wreckful siege of battering days,
 When rocks impregnable are not so stout,
 Nor gates of steel so strong, but time decays?
 O fearful meditation! where, alack! 905
 Shall time's best jewels from time's chest lie hid?
 Or what strong hand can hold his swift foot back?
 Or who his spoil of beauty can forbid?
 O none, unless this miracle have might,
 That in black ink my love may still shine bright. 910

LXVI.

Tir'd with all these, for restful death I cry,—
 As, to behold desert, a beggar born,
 And needy nothing trim'd in jollity,
 And purest faith unhappily forsworn,
 And gilded honour shamefully misplac'd, 915
 And maiden virtue rudely strumpeted,
 And right perfection wrongfully disgrac'd,
 And strength by limping sway disabled,
 And art made tongue-ty'd by authority,
 And folly (doctor like) controlling skill, 920
 And simple truth mis-call'd simplicity,
 And captive Good attending captain Ill:
 Tir'd with all these, from these would I be gone,
 Save that, to die, I leave my love alone.

LXVII.

Ah ! wherefore with infection should he live, 925
 And with his presence grace impiety,
 That sin by him advantage should achieve,
 And lace itself with his society ?
 Why should false painting imitate his cheek,
 And steal dead seeing of his living hue ? 930
 Why should poor beauty indirectly seek
 Roses of shadow, since his rose is true ?
 Why should he live now Nature bankrupt is,
 Beggar'd of blood to blush thro' lively veins ?
 For she hath no exchequer now but his, 935
 And proud of many, lives upon his gains.
 O, him she stores, to shew what wealth she had,
 In days long since, before these last so bad.

LXVIII.

Thus is his cheek the map of days out-worn,
 When beauty liv'd and died as flowers do now, 940
 Before these bastard signs of fair were borne,
 Or durst inhabit on a living brow ;
 Before the golden tresses of the dead,
 The right of sepulchres, were shorn away,
 To live a second life on second head, 945
 E'er beauty's dead fleece made another gay ;
 In him those holy antique hours are seen,
 Without all ornament, itself, and true,
 Making no summer of another's green,
 Robbing no old to dress his beauty new ; 950
 And him as for a map doth nature store,
 To shew false art what beauty was of yore.

LXIX.

Those parts of thee that the world's eye doth view,
 Want nothing that the thought of hearts can mend :
 All tongues, (the voice of souls) gave thee that due,
 Uttering bare truth, e'en so as foes commend. 956
 Thy outward thus with outward praise is crown'd ;
 But those same tongues that give thee so thine own,
 In other accents do this praise confound,
 By seeing farther than the eye has shewn. 960
 They look into the beauty of thy mind,

SONNETS.

159

And that, in guess, they measure by thy deeds :
 Then (churls) their thoughts, altho' their eyes were
 To thy fair flower add the rank smell of weeds : [kind,
 But why thy odour matcheth not thy shew, 965
 The solve is this,—that thou dost common grow.

LXX.

That thou art blam'd shall not be thy defect,
 For slander's mark was ever yet the fair ;
 The ornament of beauty is suspect,
 A crow that flies in heaven's sweetest air, 970
 So thou be good, slander doth but approve
 Thy worth the greater, being woo'd of time ;
 For canker vice the sweetest buds doth love,
 And thou present'st a pure unstained prime.
 Thou hast pass'd by the ambush of young days, 975
 Either not assail'd, or victor being charg'd ;
 Yet this thy praise cannot be so thy praise,
 To tie up envy, evermore enlarg'd :
 If some suspect of ill mask'd not thy shew,
 Then thou alone kingdoms of hearts shouldst owe. 980

LXXI.

No longer mourn for me when I am dead,
 Than you shall hear the surly fullen bell
 Give warning to the world that I am fled
 From this vile world, with vilest worms to dwell :
 Nay, if you read this line, remember not 985
 The hand that writ it ; for I love you so,
 That I in your sweet thoughts would be forgot,
 If thinking on me then should make you woe.
 O if (I say) you look upon this verse,
 When I perhaps compounded am with clay, 990
 Do not so much as my poor name rehearse ;
 But let your love e'en with my life decay :
 Lest the wise world should look into your moan,
 And mock you with me after I am gone.

LXXII.

O, lest the world should task you to recite 995
 What merit liv'd in me, that you should love
 After my death, dear love, forget me quite,
 For you in me can nothing worthy prove ;

Unless you would devise some virtuous lie,
 To do more for me than mine own desert, 1000
 And hang more praise upon deceased I,
 Than niggard truth would willingly impart :
 O, lest your true love may seem false in this,
 That you for love speak well of me untrue,
 My name be buried where my body is, 1005
 And live no more to shame nor me nor you.
 For I am 'sham'd by that which I bring forth,
 And so should you, to love things nothing worth.

LXXIII.

That time of year thou may'st in me behold
 When yellow leaves, or none, or few doth hang 1010
 Upon those boughs which shake against the cold,
 Bare ruin'd choirs, where late the sweet birds sang.
 In me thou seest the twilight of such day,
 As after sun-set fadeth in the west,
 Which by and by black night doth take away, 1015
 Death's second self, that seals up all in rest.
 In me thou seest the glowing of such fire,
 That on the ashes of his youth doth lie,
 As the death-bed whereon it must expire,
 Consum'd with that which it was nourish'd by. 1020
 This thou perceiv'st, which makes thy love more strong,
 To love that well which thou must leave ere long.

LXXIV.

But be contented : when that fell arrest
 Without all bail shall carry me away,
 My life hath in this line some interest, 1025
 Which for memorial still with thee shall stay.
 When thou reviewest this, thou dost review
 The very part was consecrate to thee.
 The earth can have but earth, which is his due ;
 My spirit's thine, the better part of me : 1030
 So then thou hast but lost the dregs of life,
 The prey of worms, my body being dead ;
 The coward conquest of a wretch's knife,
 Too base of thee to be remembered.
 The worth of that, is that which it contains, 1035
 And that is this, and this with thee remains.

SONNETS.

161

LXXV.

So are you to my thoughts, as food to life,
 Or as sweet season'd showers are to the ground ;
 And for the peace of you I hold such strife
 As 'twixt a miser and his wealth is found ; 1040
 Now proud as an enjoyer, and anon
 Doubting the filching age will steal his treasure ;
 Now counting best to be with you alone,
 Then better'd that the world may see my pleasure :
 Sometime, all full with feasting on your sight, 1045
 And by and by clean starved for a look ;
 Possessing or pursuing no delight,
 Save what is had or must from you be took,
 Thus do I pine and surfeit day by day,
 Or gluttoning on all, or all away. 1050

LXXVI.

Why is my verse so barren of new pride ?
 So far from variation or quick change ?
 Why, with the time, do I not glance aside
 To new-found methods and to compounds strange ?
 Why write I still all one, ever the same, 1055
 And keep invention in a noted weed,
 That every word doth almost tell my name,
 Shewing their birth, and where they did proceed ?
 O know, sweet love, I always write of you,
 And you and love are still my argument ; 1060
 So all my best is dressing old words new,
 Spending again what is already spent :
 For as the sun is daily new and old,
 So is my love still telling what is told.

LXXVII.

Thy glass will shew thee how thy beauties wear, 1065
 Thy dial how thy precious minutes waste ;
 The vacant leaves thy mind's imprint will bear,
 And of this book this learning may'st thou taste.
 The wrinkles which thy glass will truly shew,
 Of mouthed graves will give thee memory ; 1070
 Thou by thy dial's shady stealth may'st know
 Time's thievish progress to eternity.
 Look, what thy memory cannot contain,

Commit to these waste blanks, and thou shalt find
 Those children nurs'd, deliver'd from thy brain, 1075
 To take a new acquaintance of thy mind.
 These offices, so soft as thou wilt look,
 Shall profit thee, and much enrich thy book.

LXXVIII.

So oft have I invok'd thee for my muse,
 And found such fair assistance in my verse, 1080
 As every alien pen hath got my use,
 And under thee their poesie disperse.
 Thine eyes, that taught the dumb on high to sing,
 And heavy ignorance aloft to fly,
 Have added feathers to the learned's wing, 1085
 And given grace a double majesty.
 Yet be most proud of that which I compile,
 Whose influence is thine, and born of thee.
 In others' works thou dost but mend the style,
 And arts with thy sweet graces graced be ; 1090
 But thou art all my art, and dost advance
 As high as learning my rude ignorance.

LXXIX.

Whilst I alone did call upon thy aid,
 My verse alone had all thy gentle grace ;
 But now my gracious numbers are decay'd, 1095
 And my sick muse doth give another place.
 I grant, sweet love, thy lovely argument
 Deserves the travail of a worthier pen ;
 Yet what of thee thy poet doth invent,
 He robs thee of, and pays it thee again. 1100
 He lends thee virtue, and he stole that word
 From thy behaviour ; beauty doth he give,
 And found it in thy cheek ; he can afford
 No praise to thee but what in thee doth live.
 Then thank him not for that which he doth say, 1105
 Since what he owes thee thou thyself dost pay.

LXXX.

O how I faint when I of you do write,
 Knowing a better spirit doth use your name,
 And in the praise thereof spends all his might, 1109
 To make me tongue-ty'd, speaking of your fame !

But since your worth (wide, as the ocean is,)
 The humble as the proudest sail doth bear,
 My saucy bark, inferior far to his,
 On your broad main doth wilfully appear.
 Your shallowest help will hold me up afloat, 1115
 Whilst he upon your soundness deep doth ride ;
 Or, being wreck'd, I am a worthless boat,
 He of tall building, and of goodly pride :
 Then if he thrive, and I be cast away,
 The worst was this ;—my love was my decay. 1120

LXXXI.

Or I shall live your epitaph to make,
 Or you survive when I in earth am rotten ;
 From hence your memory death cannot take,
 Altho' in me each part will be forgotten.
 Your name from hence immortal life shall have, 1125
 Tho' I, once gone, to all the world must die.
 The earth can yield me but a common grave,
 When you entomb'd in men's eyes shall lie.
 Your monument shall be my gentle verse,
 Which eyes not yet created shall o'er-read ; 1130
 And tongues to be, your being shall rehearse,
 When all the breathers of this world are dead ;
 You still shall live (such virtue hath my pen,)
 Where breath most breathes, e'en in the mouths of men.

LXXXII.

I grant thou wert not married to my muse,
 And therefore may'st without attaint o'er-look 1135
 The dedicated words which writers use
 Of their fair subject, blessing every book.
 Thou art as fair in knowledge as in hue,
 Finding thy worth a limit past my praise ; 1140
 And therefore art enforc'd to seek anew
 Some fresher stamp of the time-bettering days.
 And do so, love ; yet when they have devis'd
 What strained touches rhetoric can lend,
 Thou truly fair wert truly sympathis'd 1145
 In true plain words, by thy true-telling friend ;
 And their gross painting might be better us'd
 Where cheeks need blood ; in thee it is abus'd.

LXXXIII.

I never saw that you did painting need,
 And therefore to your fair no painting set, 1150
 I found, or thought I found, you did exceed
 The barren tender of a poet's debt ;
 And therefore have I slept in your report,
 That you yourself, being extant, well might shew
 How far a modern quill doth come too short, 1155
 Speaking of worth, what worth in you doth grow.
 This silence for my sin you did impute,
 Which shall be most my glory, being dumb ;
 For I impair not beauty being mute,
 When others would give life, and bring a tomb. 1160
 There lives more life in one of your fair eyes,
 Than both your poets can in praise devise.

LXXXIV.

Who is it that says most ? which can say more,
 Than this rich praise,—that you alone are you ?
 In whose confine immured is the store 1165
 Which should example where your equal grew.
 Lean penury within that pen doth dwell,
 That to his subject lends not some small glory ;
 But he that writes of you, if he can tell
 That you are you, so dignifies his story, 1170
 Let him but copy what in you is writ,
 Not making worse what nature made so clear,
 And such a counter-part shall fame his wit,
 Making his style admired every where.
 You to your beauteous blessings add a curse, 1175
 Being fond on praise, which makes your praises worse.

LXXXV.

My tongue-ty'd muse in manners holds her still,
 While comments of your praise, richly compil'd,
 Reserve their character with golden quill,
 And precious phrase by all the muses fil'd. 1180
 I think good thoughts, whilst others write good words,
 And, like unletter'd clerk, still cry *Amen*
 To every hymn that able spirit affords,
 In polish'd form of well-refined pen.
 Hearing you prais'd, I say, 'tis so, 'tis true, 1185

And to the most of praise add something more ;
 But that is in my thought, whose love to you,
 Tho' words come hind-most, holds his rank before.
 Then others for the breath of words respect,
 Me for my dumb thoughts, speaking in effect. 1190

LXXXVI.

Was it the proud full sail of his great verse,
 Bound for the prize of all-too-precious you,
 That did my ripe thoughts in my brain inhearse,
 Making their tomb the womb wherein they grew ?
 Was it his spirit, by spirits taught to write 1195
 Above a mortal pitch, that struck me dead ?
 No, neither he, nor his compeers by night
 Giving him aid, my verse astonished.
 He, nor that affable familiar ghost
 Which nightly gulls him with intelligence, 1200
 As victors, of my silence cannot boast ;
 I was not sick of any fear from thence.
 But when your countenance fill'd up his line,
 Then lack'd I matter ; that enfeebled mine.

LXXXVII.

Farewel ! thou art too dear for my possessing, 1205
 And like enough thou know'st thy estimate :
 The charter of thy worth gives thee releasing ;
 My bonds in thee are all determinate.
 For how do I hold thee but by thy granting ?
 And for that riches where is my deserving ? 1210
 The cause of this fair gift in me is wanting,
 And so my patent back again is swerving.
 Thyself thou gav'st, thy own worth then not knowing,
 Or me, to whom thou gav'st it, else mistaking ;
 So thy great gift, upon misprison growing, 1215
 Comes home again, on better judgment making.
 Thus have I had thee, as a dream doth flatter,
 In sleep a king, but waking, no such matter.

LXXXVIII.

When thou shalt be dispos'd to set me light,
 And place my merit in the eye of scorn, 1220
 Upon thy sight against myself I'll fight,
 And prove thee virtuous, tho' thou art forsworn.

With mine own weakneſs being beſt acquainted,
 Upon thy part I can ſet down a ſtory
 Of faults conceal'd, wherein I am attainted ; 1225
 That thou, in loſing me, ſhall win much glory ;
 And I by this will be a gainer too ;
 For bending all my loving thoughts on thee,
 The injuries that to myſelf I do,
 Doing thee vantage, double-vantage me. 1230
 Such is my love, to thee I ſo belong,
 That for thy right myſelf will bear all wrong.

LXXXIX.

Say that thou didſt forſake me for ſome fault,
 And I will comment upon that offence ;
 Speak of my lameneſs, and I ſtraight will halt ; 1235
 Againſt thy reaſons making no defence.
 Thou canſt not, love, diſgrace me half ſo ill,
 To ſet a form upon deſired change,
 As I'll myſelf diſgrace : knowing thy will,
 I will acquaintance ſtrangle, and look ſtrange ; 1240
 Be abſent from thy walks ; and in my tongue
 Thy ſweet beloved name no more ſhall dwell ;
 Leſt I (too much profane) ſhould do it wrong,
 And haply of our old acquaintance tell.
 For thee, againſt myſelf I'll vow debate, 1245
 For I muſt ne'er love him whom thou doſt hate.

XC.

Then hate me when thou wilt ; if ever, now ;
 Now while the world is bent my deeds to croſs,
 Join with the ſpite of fortune, make me bow
 And do not drop in for an after-loſs : 1250
 Ah ! do not, when my heart hath ſcap'd this ſorrow,
 Come in the rearward of a conquer'd woe ;
 Give not a windy night a rainy morrow,
 To linger out a purpoſ'd overthrow.
 If thou wilt leave me, do not leave me laſt, 1255
 When other petty griefs have done their ſpite,
 But in the onſet come ; ſo ſhall I taſte
 At firſt the very worſt of Fortune's might ;
 And other ſtrains of woe, which now ſeem woe,
 Compar'd with loſs of thee, will not ſeem ſo. 1260

XCI.

Some glory in their birth, some in their skill,
 Some in their wealth, some in their body's force;
 Some in their garments, though new-fangled ill,
 Some in their hawks and hounds, some in their horse;
 And every humour hath his adjunct pleasure, 1265
 Wherein it finds a joy above the rest;
 But these particulars are not my measure,
 All these I better in one general best.
 Thy love is better than high birth to me,
 Richer than wealth, prouder than garments' cost, 1270
 Of more delight than hawks or horses be;
 And having thee, of all men's pride I boast.
 Wretched in this alone, that thou may'st take
 All this away, and me most wretched make.

XCII.

But do thy worst to steal thyself away, 1275
 For term of life thou art assured mine;
 And life no longer than thy love will stay,
 For it depends upon that love of thine.
 Then need I not to fear the worst of wrongs,
 When in the least of them my life hath end. 1280
 I see a better state to me belongs
 Than that which on thy humour doth depend.
 Thou canst not vex me with inconstant mind,
 Since that my life on thy revolt doth lie.
 O what a happy title do I find, 1285
 Happy to have thy love, happy to die!
 But what's so blessed fair that fears no blot?—
 Thou may'st be false, and yet I know it not:

XCIII.

So shall I live, supposing thou art true,
 Like a deceived husband: so love's face 1290
 May still seem love to me, though alter'd new;
 Thy looks with me, thy heart in other place:
 For there can live no hatred in thine eye,
 Therefore in that I cannot know thy change.
 In many looks the false heart's history 1295
 Is writ, in moods and frowns and wrinkles strange,
 But heaven in thy creation did decree,

That in thy face sweet love should ever dwell;
 Whate'er thy thoughts or thy heart's workings be,
 Thy looks should nothing thence but sweetneis tell.
 How like Eve's apple doth thy beauty grow, 1300
 If thy sweet virtue answer not thy show!

XCIV.

They that have power to hurt and will do none,
 That do not do the thing they most do show,
 Who, moving others, are themselves, as stone, 1305
 Unmoved, cold, and to temptation flow;
 They rightly do inherit heaven's graces,
 And husband nature's riches from expence;
 They are the lords and owners of their faces,
 Others but stewards of their excellence. 1310
 The summer's flower is to the summer sweet,
 Though to itself it only live and die;
 But if that flower with base infection meet,
 The basest weed out-braves his dignity;
 For sweetest things turn fourest by their deeds; 1315
 Lillies that fester, smell far worse than weeds.

XCV.

How sweet and lovely dost thou make the shame
 Which, like a canker in the fragrant rose,
 Doth spot the beauty of thy budding name?
 O, in what sweets dost thou thy sins inclose! 1320
 That tongue that tells the story of thy days,
 Making lascivious comments on thy sport,
 Cannot dispraise but in a kind of praise:
 Naming thy name blesses an ill report.
 O what a mansion have those vices got, 1325
 Which for their habitation chose out thee!
 Where beauty's veil doth cover every blot,
 And all things turns to fair that eyes can see!
 Take heed, dear heart, of this large privilege;
 The hardest knife ill-us'd doth lose its edge. 1330

XCVI.

Some say thy fault is youth, some wantonness;
 Some say thy grace is youth and gentle sport;
 Both grace and faults are lov'd of more and less;
 Thou mak'st faults graces that to thee resort.

SONNETS.

169

As on the finger of a throned queen
 The basest jewel will be well esteem'd;
 So are those errors that in thee are seen,
 To truths translated, and for true things deem'd.
 How many lambs might the stern wolf betray,
 If like a lamb he could his looks translate! 1340
 How many gazers might'st thou lead away,
 If thou would'st use the strength of all thy state!
 But do not so; I love thee in such sort,
 As thou being mine, mine is thy good report.

XCVII.

How like a winter hath my absence been 1345
 From thee the pleasure of the fleeting year!
 What freezings have I felt, what dark days seen?
 What old December's bareness every where!
 And yet this time remov'd was summer's time;
 The teeming autumn, big with rich increase, 1350
 Bearing the wanton burden of the prime,
 Like widow'd wombs after their lords' decease:
 Yet this abundant issue seem'd to me
 But hope of orphans, and unfather'd fruit;
 For summer and his pleasures wait on thee, 1355
 And thou away, the very birds are mute;
 Or, if they sing, 'tis with so dull a cheer,
 That leaves look pale, dreading the winter's near.

XCVIII.

From you have I been absent in the spring,
 When proud-pied April, dress'd in all his trim, 1360
 Hath put a spirit of youth in every thing;
 That heavy Saturn laugh'd and leap'd with him.
 Yet nor the lays of birds, nor the sweet smell
 Of different flowers in odour and in hue,
 Could make me any summer's story tell, 1365
 Or from their proud lap pluck them where they grew:
 Nor did I wonder at the lillies white,
 Nor praise the deep vermillion in the rose;
 They were but sweet, but figures of delight,
 Drawn after you, you pattern of all those. 1370
 Yet, seem'd it winter still, and, you away.
 As with your shadow I with these did play:

XCIX.

The forward violet thus did I chide ;—
 Sweet thief, whence didst thou steal thy sweet that smells,
 If not from my love's breath ? The purple pride 1375
 Which on thy soft cheek for complexion dwells,
 In my love's veins thou hast too grossly dy'd.
 The lily I condemned for thy hand,
 And buds of marjoram had stolen thy hair :
 The roses fearfully on thorns did stand, 1380
 One blushing shame, another white despair ;
 A third, nor red nor white, had stolen of both,
 And to his robbery had annex'd thy breath ;
 But for his theft, in pride of all his growth
 A vengeful canker eat him up to death. 1385
 More flowerls I noted, yet I none could see,
 But sweet or colour it had stolen from thee.

C.

Where art thou, muse, that thou forget'st so long
 To speak of that which gives thee all thy might ?
 Spend'st thou thy fury on some worthless song, 1390
 Darkening thy power, to lend base subjects light ?
 Return, forgetful muse, and straight redeem
 In gentle numbers time so idly spent ;
 Sing to the ear that doth thy lays esteem,
 And gives thy pen both skill and argument. 1395
 Rise, restive muse, my love's sweet face survey,
 If Time have any wrinkle graven there ;
 If any, be a satire to decay,
 And make Time's spoils despised every where.
 Give my love fame faster than Time wastes life ; 1400
 So thou prevent'st his scythe and crooked knife.

CI.

O truant Muse, what shall be thy amends,
 For thy neglect of truth in beauty dy'd ?
 Both truth and beauty on my love depends ;
 So dost thou too, and therein dignify'd. 1405
 Make answer, Muse : wilt thou not haply say,
Truth needs no colour, with his colour fix'd,
Beauty no pencil, beauty's truth to lay :
But best is best, if newer intermix'd ? —

SONNETS.

171

Because he needs no praise wilt thou be dumb? 1410
Excuse not silence so; for it lies in thee
To make him much outlive a gilded tomb,
And to be prais'd of ages yet to be.
Then do thy office, Muse; I teach the how
To make him seem long hence as he shows now. 1415

CII.

My love is strengthen'd, though more weak in seeming;
I love not less, though less the show appear:
That love is merchandis'd, whose rich esteeming
The owner's tongue doth publish every where. 1419
Our love was new, and then but in the spring,
When I was wont to greet it with my lays;
As Philomel in summer's front doth sing,
And stops his pipe in growth of riper days:
Not that the summer is less pleasant now 1424
Than when her mournful hymns did hush the night,
But that wild music burdens every bough,
And sweets grown common lose their dear delight.
Therefore, like her, I sometimes hold my tongue,
Because I would not dull you with my song.

CIII.

Alack! what poverty my muse brings forth, 1430
That having such a scope to show her pride,
The argument, all bare, is of more worth,
Than when it hath my added praise beside.
O blame me not if I no more can write!
Look in your glass, and there appears a face 1435
That over-goes my blunt invention quite,
Dulling my lines, and doing me disgrace.
Were it not sinful then, striving to mend,
To mar the subject that before was well?
For to no other pass my verses tend, 1440
Than of your graces and your gifts to tell;
And more, much more, than in my verse can sit,
Your own glass shows you, when you look in it.

CIV.

To me, fair friend, you never can be old, 1445
For as you were, when first your eye I ey'd,
Such seems your beauty still. Three winters cold

Have from the forests shook three summer's pride ;
 Three beauteous springs to yellow autumn turn'd,
 In process of the seasons have I seen, 1449
 Three April perfumes in three hot Junes burn'd,
 Since first I saw you fresh which yet are green.
 Ah! yet doth beauty, like a dial hand,
 Steal from his figure, and no pace perceiv'd,
 So your sweet hue, which methinks still doth stand,
 Hath motion, and mine eye may be deceiv'd. 1453
 For fear of which, hear this, thou age unbred,
 Ere you were born was beauty's summer dead.

CV.

Let not my love be call'd idolatry,
 Nor my beloved as an idol show,
 Since all alike my songs and praises be, 1460
 To one, of one, still such, and ever so.
 Kind is my love to-day, to morrow kind,
 Still constant in a wondrous excellence ;
 Therefore my verse to constancy confin'd,
 One thing expressing, leaves out difference. 1465
 Fair, kind, and true, is all my argument,
 Fair, kind, and true, varying to other words ;
 And in this change is my invention spent,
 Three themes in one, which wondrous scope affords.
 Fair, kind, and true, have often liv'd alone, 1470
 Which three, till now, never kept seat in one.

CVI.

When in the chronicle of wasted time
 I see descriptions of the fairest wights,
 And beauty making beautiful old rhyme,
 In praise of ladies dead, and lovely knights, 1475
 Then in the blazon of sweet beauty's best,
 Of hand, of foot, of lip, of eye, of brow,
 I see their antique pen would have express'd
 Even such a beauty as you master now.
 So all their praises are but prophecies 1480
 Of this our time, all you prefiguring ;
 And, for they look'd but with divining eyes,
 They had not skill enough your worth to sing :

SONNETS.

173

For we, which now behold these present days,
Have eyes to wonder, but lack tongues to praise. 1854

CVII.

Not mine own fears, nor the prophetic soul
Of the wide world dreaming on things to come,
Can yet the lease of my true love control,
Suppos'd as forfeit to a confin'd doom.
The mortal moon hath her eclipse endur'd, 1490
And the sad augurs mock their own presage ;
Uncertainties now crown themselves assur'd,
And peace proclaims olives of endless age.
Now with the drops of this most balmy time 1494
My love looks fresh, and Death to me subscribes,
Since spite of him I'll live in this poor rhyme,
While he insults o'er dull and speechless tribes.
And thou in this shalt find thy monument,
When tyrants' crests and tombs of brass are spent.

CVIII.

What's in the brain that ink may character, 1500
Which hath not figur'd to thee my true spirit ?
What's new to speak, what new to register,
That may express my love, or thy dear merit ?
Nothing, sweet boy ; but yet, like prayers divine,
I must each day say o'er the very same ; 1505
Counting no old thing old, thou mine, I thine,
E'en as when first I hallow'd thy fair name.
So that eternal love in love's fresh case
Weighs not the dust and injury of age,
Nor gives to necessary wrinkles place, 1510
But makes antiquity for aye his page ;
Finding the first conceit of love there bred,
Where time and outward form would show it dead.

CIX.

O never say that I was false of heart,
Tho' absence seem'd my flame to qualify. 1515
As easy might I from myself depart,
As from my soul which in thy breast doth lie :
That is my home of love : if I have rang'd,
Like him that travails, I return again ; 1519
Just to the time, not with the time exchang'd,—

So that myself bring water for my stain.
 Never believe, tho' in my nature reign'd
 All frailties that besiege all kinds of blood,
 That it could so preposterously be stain'd,
 To leave for nothing all thy sum of good ; 1525
 For nothing this wide universe I call,
 Save thou, my rose ; in it thou art my all.

CX.

Alas, 'tis true, I have gone here and there,
 And made myself a motley to the view, 1529
 Gor'd mine own thoughts, sold cheap what is most
 Made old offences of affections new. [dear,
 Most true it is, that I have look'd on truth
 Askance and strangely ; but, by all above,
 These blenches gave my heart another youth,
 And worse essays prov'd thee my best of love. 1535
 Now all is done, save what shall have no end :
 Mine appetite I never more will grind
 On newer proof, to try an older friend,
 A God in love, to whom I am confin'd.
 Then give me welcome, next my heaven the best, 1540
 E'en to thy pure and most most loving breast.

CXI.

O for my sake do thou with fortune chide,
 The guilty goddess of my harmful deeds,
 That did not better for my life provide, 1544
 Than public means, which public manners breeds.
 Thence comes it that my name receives a brand,
 And almost thence my nature is subdu'd
 To what it works in, like the dyer's hand.
 Pity me then, and wish I were renew'd ;
 Whilst, like a willing patient, I will drink 1550
 Potions of eysell, 'gainst my strong infection ;
 No bitterness that I will bitter think,
 Nor double penance to correct correction.
 Pity me then, dear friend, and I assure ye,
 E'en that your pity is enough to cure me. 1555

CXII.

Your love and pity doth the impression fill
 Which vulgar scandal stamp'd upon my brow ;

SONNETS.

175

For what care I who calls me well or ill,
 So you o'er-green my bad, my good allow?
 You are my all-the-world, and I must strive 1560
 To know my shames and praises from your tongue;
 None else to me, nor I to none alive,
 That my steel'd sense or changes, right or wrong.
 In so profound abyssm I throw all care
 Of others' voices, that my adder's sense 1565
 To critic and to flatterer stopped are.
 Mark how with my neglect I do dispense
 You are so strongly in my purpose bred,
 That all the world besides methinks are dead.

CXIII.

Since I left you, mine eye is in my mind, 1570
 And that which governs me to go about,
 Doth part his function, and is partly blind,
 Seems seeing, but effectually is out;
 For it no form delivers to the heart 1574
 Of bird, of flower, or shape, which it doth lack;
 Of his quick objects hath the mind no part,
 Nor his own vision holds what it doth catch;
 For if it see the rud'st or gentlest sight,
 The most sweet favour, or deformed'st creature,
 The mountain or the sea, the day or night, 1580
 The crow, or dove, it shapes them to your feature.
 Incapable of more, replete with you,
 My most true mind thus maketh mine untrue.

CXIV.

Or whether doth my mind, being crown'd with you,
 Drink up the monarch's plague, this flattery, 1585
 Or whether shall I say mine eye faith true,
 And that your love taught it this alchemy,
 To make of monsters and things indigest,
 Such cherubins as your sweet self resemble,
 Creating every bad a perfect best, 1590
 As fast as objects to his beams assemble?
 O 'tis the first; 'tis flattery in my seeing,
 And my great mind most kingly drinks it up:
 Mine eye well knows what with his gust is greeing,
 And to his palate doth prepare the cup: 1595

If it be poison'd, 'tis the lesser sin
That mine eye loves it, and doth first begin.

CXV.

Those lines that I before have writ do lie,
E'en those that said I could not love you dearer ;
Yet then my judgment knew no reason why 1600
My most full flame should afterwards burn clearer.
But reckoning time whose million'd accidents
Creep in 'twixt vows, and change decrees of kings ;
Tan sacred beauty, blunt the sharp'st intents, 1604
Divert strong minds to the course of altering things ;
Alas ! why, fearing of time's tyranny,
Might I not then say, *now I love you best*,
When I was certain o'er uncertainty,
Crowning the present, doubting of the rest,
Love is a babe : then might I not say so, 1610
To give full growth to that which still doth grow ?

CXVI.

Let me not to the marriage of true minds
Admit impediments. Love is not love
Which alters when it alteration finds,
Or bends with the remover to remove : 1615
O no ! it is an ever-fixed mark,
That looks on tempests, and is never shaken ;
It is the star to every wandering bark,
Whose worth's unknown, although his height be taken.
Love's not Time's fool, though rosy lips and cheeks
Within his bending sickle's compass come ; 1621
Love alters not with his brief hours and weeks,
But bears it out e'en to the edge of doom.
If this be error, and upon me prov'd,
I never writ, nor no man ever lov'd. 1625

CXVII.

Accuse me thus ; that I have scant'd all
Wherein I should your great deserts repay ;
Forgot upon your dearest love to call,
Whereto all bonds do tie me day by day ;
That I have frequent been with unknown minds, 1630
And given to time your own dear purchas'd right ;
That I have hoisted sail to all the winds

SONNETS.

177

Which should transport me farthest from your sight.
 Book both my wilfulness and errors down,
 And on just proof, surmise accumulate, 1635
 Bring me within the level of your frown,
 But shoot not at me in your waken'd hate :
 Since my appeal says, I did strive to prove
 The constancy and virtue of your love.

CXVIII.

Like as, to make our appetites more keen, 1640
 With eager compounds we our palate urge ;
 As, to prevent our maladies unseen,
 We sicken to shun sickness, when we purge ;
 E'en so, being full of your ne'er cloying sweetness,
 To bitter sauces did I frame my feeding, 1645
 And, sick of welfare, found a kind of meetness.
 To be diseas'd, ere that there was true needing.
 Thus policy in love, to anticipate
 The ills that were not, grew to faults assured,
 And brought to medicine a healthful state, 1650
 Which, rank of goodness, would by ill be cured.
 But thence I learn, and find the lesson true,
 Drugs poison him that so fell sick of you.

CXIX.

What potions have I drunk of Syren tears,
 Distill'd from limbeckes foul as hell within, 1655
 Applying fears to hopes, and hopes to fears,
 Still losing when I saw myself to win !
 What wretched errors hath my heart committed,
 Whilst it hath thought itself so blessed never !
 How have mine eyes out of their spheres been fitted,
 In the distraction of this madding fever ! 1661
 O benefit of ill ! now I find true
 That better is by evil still made better ;
 And ruin'd love, when it is built anew,
 Grows fairer than at first, more strong, far greater.
 So I return rebuk'd to my content, 1666
 And gain by ill thrice more than I have spent.

CXX.

That you were once unkind, befriends me now,
 And for that sorrow, which I then did feel,

Needs must I under my transgression bow,
 Were to import forgetfulness in me. 1670
 For if you were by my unkindness shaken,
 As I by yours, you've pass'd a hell of time;
 And I, a tyrant, have no leizure taken
 To weigh how once I suffer'd in your crime. 1675
 O that our night of woe might have remember'd
 My deepest sense, how hard true sorrow hits,
 And soon to you, as you to me, then tender'd
 The humble salve which wounded bosom fits!
 But that your trespass now becomes a fee; 1680
 Mine ransoms your's, and your's must ransom me.

CXXI.

'Tis better to be vile, than vile esteem'd,
 When not to be receives reproach of being,
 And the just pleasure lost, which is so deem'd
 Not by our feeling, but by others' seeing.
 For why should others' false adulterate eyes 1685
 Give salutation to my sportive blood?
 Or on my frailties why are frailer spies,
 Which in their wills count bad what I think good?
 No,—I am that I am; and they that level 1690
 At my abuses, reckon up their own:
 I may be straight, tho' they themselves be bevel;
 By their rank thoughts my deeds must not be shown;
 Unless this general evil they maintain,
 All men are bad and in their badness reign. 1695

CXXII.

Thy gift, thy tables, are within my brain
 Full character'd with lasting memory, 1675
 Which shall above that idle rank remain,
 Beyond all date, even to eternity:
 Or at the least so long as brain and heart 1700
 Have faculty by nature to subsist;
 Till each to raz'd oblivion yield his part
 Of thee, thy record never can be miss'd.
 That poor retention could not so much hold,
 Nor need I tallies, thy dear love to score; 1705
 Therefore to give them from me was I bold,
 To trust those tables that receive thee more:

To keep an adjunct to remember thee,
Unless my nerves were brass or hammer'd steel.

CXXIII.

No! Time, thou shalt not boast that I do change:
Thy pyramids built up with newer might 1711
To me are nothing novel, nothing strange;
They are but dressings of a former sight.
Our dates are brief, and therefore we admire
What thou dost foist upon us that is old, 1715
And rather make them born to our desire,
Than think that we before have heard them told.
Thy registers and thee I both defy,
Not wondering at the present nor the past;
For thy records and what we see doth lie, 1720
Made more or less by thy continual haste:
This I do vow, and this shall ever be,
I will be true, despite thy scythe and thee.

CXXIV.

If my dear love were but the child of state,
It might for fortune's bastard be unfather'd, 1725
As subject to time's love, or to time's hate,
Weeds among weeds, or flowers with flowers gather'd.
No, it was builded far from accident;
It suffers not in smiling pomp, nor falls
Under the blow of thrall'd discontent, 1730
Whereto the inviting time our fashion calls:
It fears not policy, that heretic,
Which works on leases of short-number'd hours,
But all alone stands hugely politic,
That it not grows with heat, nor drowns with showers.
To this I witness call the fools of time, 1736
Which die for goodness, who have liv'd for crime.

CXXV.

Were it aught to me I bore thee canopy,
With my extern the outward honouring,
Or lay'd great bases for eternity, 1740
Which prove more short than waste or ruining?
Have I not seen dwellers on form and favour
Lose all, and more, by paying too much rent,
For compound sweet foregoing simple favour

Pitiful thrivers, in their gazing spent ? 1745
 No ;—let me be obsequious in thy heart,
 And take thou my oblation, poor but free,
 Which is not mix'd with seconds, knows no art,
 But mutual render, only me for thee.
 Hence, thou suborn'd informer ! a true soul, 1750
 When most impeach'd, stands least in thy control.

CXXVI.

O thou, my lovely boy, who in thy power
 Dost hold time's fickle glass, his fickle, hour ;
 Who hast by waning groan, and therein show'st
 Thy lovers withering, as thy sweet self grow'st ; 1755
 If nature, sovereign mistress over wrack,
 As thou goest onwards, still will pluck thee back,
 She keeps thee to this purpose, that her skill
 May time disgrace, and wretched minutes kill.
 Yet fear her, O thou minion of her pleasure ; 1760
 She may detain, but not still keep her treasure :
 Her audit, tho' delay'd, answer'd must be,
 And her quietus is to render thee.

CXXVII.

In the old age black was not counted fair,
 Or if it were, it bore not beauty's name ; 1765
 But now is black beauty's successive heir,
 And beauty slander'd with a bastard shame.
 For since each hand hath put on nature's power,
 Fairing the foul with art's false borrow'd face,
 Sweet beauty hath no name, no holy hour, 1770
 But is profan'd, if not lives in disgrace.
 Therefore my mistress' eyes are raven black,
 Her eyes so suited ; and they mourners seem
 At such, who not born fair, no beauty lack,
 Slandering creation with a false esteem : 1775
 Yet so they mourn, becoming of their woe,
 That every tongue says, beauty should look so.

CXXVIII.

How oft, when thou, my music, music play'st,
 Upon that blessed wood whose motion sounds
 With thy sweet fingers, when thou gently sway'st
 The wiry concord that mine ear confounds, 1781

Do I envy those jacks, that nimble leap
 To kiss the tender inward of thy hand,
 Whilst my poor lips, which should that harvest reap,
 At the wood's boldness by thee blushing stand ! 1785
 To be so tickled, they would change their state
 And situation with those dancing chips
 O'er whom thy fingers walk with gentle gait,
 Making dead wood more blest'd than living lips.
 Since saucy jacks so happy are in this, 1790
 Give them thy fingers, me thy lips to kiss.

CXXIX.

The expence of spirit in a waste of shame
 Is lust in action ; and till action, lust
 Is perjur'd, murderous, bloody, full of blame,
 Savage, extreme, rude, cruel, not to trust ; 1795
 Enjoy'd no sooner, but despised straight ;
 Past reason hunted ; and no sooner had,
 Past reason hated, as a swallow'd bait,
 On purpose laid to make the taker mad :
 Mad in pursuit, and in possession so ; 1800
 Had, having, and in quest to have, extreme ;
 A bliss in proof,—and prov'd, a very woe ;
 Before, a joy propos'd ; behind, a dream :
 All this the world well knows ; yet none knows well
 To shun the heaven that leads men to this hell. 1805

CXXX.

My mistress' eyes are nothing like the sun ;
 Coral is far more red than her lips red :
 If snow be white, why then her breasts are dun ;
 If hairs be wires, black wires grow on her head.
 I have seen roses damask'd, red and white, 1810
 But no such roses see I in her cheeks ;
 And in some perfumes is there more delight
 Than in the breath that from my mistress reeks.
 I love to hear her speak,—yet well I know
 That music hath a far more pleasing sound ; 1815
 I grant I never saw a goddess go,—
 My mistress, when she walks, treads on the ground ;
 And yet, by heaven, I think my love as rare
 As any she bely'd with false compare.

CXXXI.

Thou art as tyrannous, so as thou art, 1826
 As those whose beauties proudly make them cruel ;
 For well thou know'st to my dear doting heart
 Thou art the fairest and most precious jewel.
 Yet, in good faith, some say, that thee behold,
 Thy face hath not the power to make love groan :
 To say they err, I dare not be so bold, 1826
 Altho' I swear it to myself alone.
 And, to be sure that is not false I swear,
 A thousand groans, but thinking on thy face,
 One on another's neck, do witness bear 1830
 Thy black is fairest in my judgment's place.
 In nothing art thou black, save in thy deeds,
 And thence this slander, as I think, proceeds.

CXXXII.

Thine eyes I love, and they, as pitying me,
 Knowing thy heart, torment me with disdain ; 1835
 Have put on black, and loving mourners be,
 Looking with pretty ruth upon my pain.
 And truly not the morning sun of heaven
 Better becomes the grey cheeks of the east,
 Nor that full star that ushers in the even, 1840
 Doth half that glory to the sober west,
 As those two mourning eyes become thy face ;
 O let it then as well beseem thy heart
 To mourn for me, since mourning doth thee grace,
 And suit thy pity like in every part. 1845
 Then will I swear beauty herself is black,
 And all they foul that thy complexion lack.

CXXXIII.

Beshrew that heart that makes my heart to groan
 For that deep wound it gives my friend and me !
 Is't not enough to torture me alone, 1850
 But slave to slavery, my sweetest friend must be ?
 Me from myself thy cruel eye hath taken,
 And my next self thou harder hast engross'd ;
 Of him, myself, and thee, I am forsaken ;
 And torment thrice threefold thus to be cross'd. 1855
 Prison my heart in thy steel bosom ward,

SONNETS.

183

But then my friend's heart let my poor heart bail;
 Whoe'er keeps me, let my heart be his guard;
 Thou canst not then use rigour in my gaol;
 And yet thou wilt; for I, being pent in thee, 1860
 Perforce am thine, and all that is in me.

CXXXIV.

So now I have confess'd that he is thine,
 And I myself am mortgag'd in thy will;
 Myself I'll forfeit, so that other mine
 Thou wilt restore, to be my comfort still: 1865
 But thou wilt not, nor he will not be free,
 For thou art covetous, and he is kind;
 He learn'd but, surety-like, to write for me,
 Under that bond that him as fast doth bind.
 The statue of thy beauty thou wilt take, 1870
 Thou usurer that put'st forth all to use,
 And sue a friend, came debtor for my sake;
 So him I lose thro' my unkind abuse.
 Him have I lost; thou hast both him and me,
 He pays the whole, and yet am I not free. 1875

CXXXV.

Whoever hath her will, thou hast thy will,
 And will to boot, and will in overplus:
 More than enough am I that vex thee still,
 To thy sweet will making addition thus.
 Wilt thou, whose will is large and spacious, 1880
 Not once vouchsafe to hide my will in thine?
 Shall will in others seem right gracious,
 And in my will no fair acceptance shine?
 The sea, all water, yet receives rain still,
 And in abundance addeth to his store; 1885
 So thou, being rich in will, add to thy will
 One will of mine, to make thy large will more.
 Let no unkind, no fair beseechers kill;
 Think of all but one, and me in that one will.

CXXXVI.

If thy soul check thee that I come so near, 1890
 Swear by thy blind soul that I was thy will,
 And will, thy soul knows, is admitted there;
 Thus far for love, my love-suit, sweet, fulfil.

Will will fulfil the treasure of thy love,
 Ay, fill it full with wills, and my will one, 1895
 In things of great receipt with ease we prove;
 Among a number one is reckon'd none.
 Then in the number let me pass untold,
 Tho' in thy stores' account I one must be;
 For nothing hold me, so it please thee hold 1900
 That nothing me, a something sweet to thee:
 Make but my name thy love, and love that still,
 And then thou lov'st me,—for my name is Will.

CXXXVII.

Thou blind fool, Love, what dost thou to mine eyes,
 That they behold, and see not what they see? 1905
 They know what beauty is, see where it lies,
 Yet what the best is, take the worst to be.
 If eyes, corrupt by over-partial looks,
 Be anchor'd in the bay where all men ride,
 Why of eyes' falshood hast thou forged hooks, 1910
 Whereto the judgment of my heart is ty'd?
 Why should my heart think that a several plot,
 Which my heart knows the wide world's common
 Or mine eyes seeing this, say this is not? [place?
 To put fair truth upon so fool a face? 1915
 In things right true my heart and eyes have err'd,
 And to this false plague are they now transferr'd.

CXXXVIII.

When my love swears that she is made of truth,
 I do believe her, tho' I know she lies;
 That she might think me some untutor'd youth, 1920
 Unlearned in the world's false subtilties.
 Thus vainly thinking that she thinks me young,
 Altho' she knows my days are past the best,
 Simply I credit her false-speaking tongue;
 On both sides thus is simple truth suppress'd. 25
 But wherefore says she not, she is unjust?
 And wherefore say not I, that I am old?
 O love's best habit is in seeming trust,
 And age in love loves not to have years told.
 Therefore I lie with her, and she with me, 1930
 And in our faults by lies we flatter'd be.

CXXXIX.

O call not me to justify the wrong,
 That thy unkindness lays upon my heart;
 Wound me not with thine eye, but with thy tongue;
 Use power with power, and slay me not by art. 1935
 Tell me thou lov'st elsewhere; but in my sight,
 Dear heart, forbear to glance thine eye aside.
 What need'st thou wound with cunning, when thy might
 Is more than my o'erpress'd defence can 'bide?
 Let me excuse thee: ah! my love well knows 1940
 Her pretty looks have been mine enemies;
 And therefore from my face she turns my foes,
 That they elsewhere might dart their injuries:
 Yet do not so; but since I am near slain,
 Kill me outright with looks, and rid my pain. 1945

CXL.

Be wise as thou art cruel; do not press
 My tongue-ty'd patience with too much disdain;
 Lest sorrow lend me words, and words express
 The manner of my pity-wanting pain.
 If I might teach thee wit, better it were, 1950
 Though not to love, yet, love to tell me so;
 (As testy sick men, when their deaths be near,
 No news but health from their physicians know:)
 For if I should despair, I should grow mad,
 And in my madness might speak ill of thee: 1955
 Now this ill-wrestling world is grown so bad,
 Mad slanders by mad ears believed be.
 That I may not be so, nor thou bely'd,
 Bear thine eyes straight, though thy proud heart go wide.

CXLI.

In faith I do not love thee with mine eyes, 1960
 For they in thee a thousand errors note;
 But 'tis my heart that loves what they despise,
 Who in despite of view is pleas'd to dote.
 Nor are mine ears with thy tongue's tune delighted;
 Nor tender feeling, to base touches prone, 1965
 Nor taste nor smell, desire to be invited
 To any sensual feast with thee alone:
 But my five wits, nor my five senses can

Dissuade one foolish heart from serving thee,
 Who leaves unsway'd the likeness of a man, 1970
 Thy proud heart's slave and vassal wretch to be:
 Only my plague thus far I count my gain,
 That she that makes me sin, awards me pain.

CXLII.

Love is my sin, and my dear virtue hate,
 Hate of my sin, grounded on sinful loving: 1975
 O but with mine compare thou thine own state,
 And thou shalt find it merits not reproving,
 Or if it do, not from those lips of thine,
 That have profan'd their scarlet ornaments,
 And seal'd false bonds of love as oft as mine; 1980
 Robb'd others' beds revenues of their rents.
 Be it lawful I love thee, as thou lov'st those
 Whom thine eyes woo as mine importune thee:
 Root pity in thy heart, that when it grows,
 Thy pity may deserve to pity'd be. 1985
 If thou dost seek to have what thou dost hide,
 By self-example may'st thou be deny'd!

CXLIII.

Lo as a careful house-wife runs to catch
 One of her feather'd creatures broke away,
 Sets down her babe, and makes all swift dispatch
 In pursuit of the thing she would have stay, 1991
 Whilst her neglected child holds her in chace,
 Cries to catch her whose busy care is bent
 'To follow that which flies before her face,
 Not prizing her poor infants discontent; 1995
 So run'st thou after that which flies from thee,
 Whilst I, thy babe, chace thee afar behind;
 But if thou catch thy hope, turn back to me,
 And play the mother's part, kiss me, be kind:
 So will I pray that thou may'st have thy will, 2000
 If thou turn back, and my loud crying still.

CXLIV.

Two loves I have of comfort and despair,
 Which like two spirits do suggest me still;
 The better angel is a man right fair,
 The worser spirit a woman, colour'd ill. 2005

To win me soon to hell, my female evil
 Tempteth my better angel from my side,
 And would corrupt my saint to be a devil,
 Wooing his purity with her fool pride.
 And whether that my angel be turn'd fiend, 2010
 Suspect I may, yet not directly tell;
 But being both from me, both to each friend,
 I guess one angel is another's hell.
 Yet this shall I ne'er know, but live in doubt,
 Till my bad angel fire my good one out. 2015

CXLV.

Those lips that Love's own hand did make,
 Breath'd forth the sound that said, *I hate*,
 To me that languish'd for her sake;
 But when she saw my woeful state,
 Straight in her heart did mercy come, 2020
 Chiding that tongue, that ever sweet
 Was us'd in giving gentle doom;
 And taught it thus a-new to greet:
I hate she alter'd with an end,
 That follow'd it as gentle day 2025
 Doth follow night, who like a fiend
 From heaven to hell is flown away.
I hate from hate away she threw,
 And sav'd my life, saying—*not you*.

CXLVI.

Poor soul, the centre of my sinful earth, 2030
 Fool'd by those rebel powers that thee array,
 Why dost thou pine within, and suffer dearth,
 Painting the outward walls so costly gay?
 Why so large cost, having so short a lease,
 Dost thou upon thy fading mansion spend? 2035
 Shall worms, inheritors of this excess,
 Eat up thy charge? Is this thy body's end?
 Then, soul, live thou upon thy servant's loins,
 And let that pine to aggravate thy store:
 Buy terms divine in selling hours of dross; 2040
 Within be fed, without be rich no more:
 So shalt thou feed on death, that feeds on men,
 And, death once dead, there's no more dying then.

CXLVII.

My love is as a fever, longing still
 For that which longer nurieth the disease; 2045
 Feeding on that which doth preserve the ill,
 The uncertain sickly appetite to please.
 My reason the physician to my love,
 Angry that his prescriptions are not kept,
 Hath left me, and I desperate now approve 2050
 Desire is death, which physic did except.
 Past cure I am, now reason is past care,
 And frantic-mad with evermore unrest;
 My thoughts and my discourse as mad men's are, 2055
 At random from the truth vainly express'd;
 For I have sworn thee fair, and thought thee bright,
 Who art as black as hell, as dark as night.

CXLVIII.

O me! what eyes hath love put in my head,
 Which have no correspondence with true sight? 2060
 Or, if they have, where is my judgment fled,
 That censures falsely what they see aright?
 If that be fair whereon my false eyes dote,
 What means the world to say it is not so?
 If it be not, then love doth well denote 2065
 Love's eye is not so true as all men's: no,
 How can it? O how can Love's eye be true,
 That is so vex'd with watching and with tears?
 No marvel then though I mistake my view;
 The sun itself sees not, till heaven clears. 2070
 O cunning Love! with tears thou keep'st me blind;
 Lest eyes well seeing thy foul faults should find.

CXLIX.

Canst thou, O cruel! say I love thee not,
 When I, against myself, with thee partake!
 Do I not think on thee, when I forgot 2075
 Am of myself, all tyrant, for thy sake?
 Who hateth thee that I do call my friend?
 On whom frown'st thou that I do fawn upon?
 Nay, if thou low'r'st on me, do I not spend
 Revenge upon myself with present moan? 2080
 What merit do I in myself respect,

That is so proud thy service to despise,
 When all my best doth worship thy defect,
 Commanded by the motion of thine eyes?
 But, love, hate on, for now I know thy mind; 2085
 Those that can see thou lov'st, and I am blind.

CL.

O from what power hast thou this powerful might,
 With insufficiency my heart to sway?
 To make me give the lie to my true sight,
 And swear that brightness doth not grace the day 2090
 Whence hast thou this becoming of things ill,
 That in the very refuse of thy deeds
 There is such strength and warrantise of skill,
 That in my mind, thy worst all best exceeds?
 Who taught thee how to make me love thee more, 2095
 The more I hear and see just cause of hate?
 O, though I love what others do abhor,
 With others thou should'st not abhor my state;
 If thy unworthiness rais'd love in me,
 More worthy I to be belov'd of thee. 2100

CLI.

Love is too young to know what conscience is;
 Yet who knows not, conscience is born of love?
 Then, gentle cheater, urge not my amiss,
 Lest guilty of my faults thy sweet self prove.
 For thou betraying me, I do betray 2105
 My nobler part to my gross body's treason;
 My soul doth tell my body that he may
 Triumph in love; flesh stays no farther reason;
 But rising at thy name, doth point out thee
 As his triumphant prize. Proud of this pride, 2110
 He is contented thy poor drudge to be,
 To stand in thy affairs, fall by thy side.
 No want of conscience hold it that I call
 Her love, for whose dear love I rise and fall.

CLII.

In loving thee thou know'st I am forsworn, 2115
 But thou art twice forsworn to me love swearing;
 In act thy bed-vow broke, and new faith torn,
 In vowing new hate after new love bearing.

But why of two oaths' breach do I accuse thee,
 When I break twenty? I am perjur'd most; 2120
 For all my vows are oaths to misuse thee,
 And all my honest faith in thee is lost:
 For I have sworn deep oaths of thy deep kindness,
 Oaths of thy love, thy truth, thy constancy;
 And, to enlighten thee, gave eyes to blindness, 2125
 Or made them swear against the thing they see;
 For I have sworn thee fair: more perjur'd I,
 To swear, against the truth, so foul a lie!

CLIII.

Cupid lay'd by his brand, and fell asleep:
 A maid of Dian's this advantage found, 2130
 And his love-kindling fire did quickly steep
 In a cold valley-fountain of that ground;
 Which borrow'd from this holy fire of love
 A dateless lively heat, still to endure,
 And grew a seething bath which yet men prove, 2135
 Against strange maladies a sovereign cure.
 But at my mistress' eye love's brand new-fired,
 The boy for trial needs would touch my breast;
 I sick withal, the help of bath desired,
 And thither hied, a sad distemper'd guest, 2140
 But found no cure; the bath for my help lies
 Where Cupid got new fire; my mistress eyes.

CLIV.

The little love-god lying once asleep,
 Laid by his side his heart-inflaming brand,
 Whilst many nymphs that vow'd chaste life to keep,
 Came tripping by; but in her maiden hand 2146
 The fairest votary took up that fire
 Which many legions of true hearts had warm'd:
 And so the general of hot desire
 Was sleeping by a virgin hand disarm'd. 2150
 This brand she quenched in a cool well by,
 Which from love's fire took heat perpetual,
 Growing a bath and healthful remedy
 For men diseas'd; but I my mistress' thrall,
 Came there for cure, and this by that I prove, 2155
 Love's fire heats water, water cools not love.

THE PASSIONATE PILGRIM.

I

DID not the heavenly rhetoric of thine eye,
'Gainst whom the world cannot hold argument,
Persuade my heart to this false perjury?
Vows for thee broke deserve not punishment.
A woman I forswore; but I will prove, 5
Thou being a goddess, I forswore not thee:
My vow was earthly, thou a heavenly love;
Thy grace being gain'd, cures all disgrace in me.
My vow was breath, and breath a vapour is;
Then thou fair sun, which on my earth dost shine, 10
Exhal'st this vapour vow; in thee it is:
If broken, then it is no fault of mine.
If by me broke, what fool is not so wise
To break an oath, to win a paradise?

II.

Sweet Cytherea, sitting by a brook, 15
With young Adonis, lovely, fresh, and green,
Did court the lad with many a lovely look,
Such looks as none could look but beauty's queen.
She told him stories to delight his ear;
She shew'd him favours to allure his eye: 20
To win his heart, she touch'd him here and there:
Touches so soft still conquer chastity.
But whether unripe years did want conceit,
Or he refus'd to take her figur'd proffer, 25
The tender nibbler would not touch the bait,
But smile and jest at every gentle offer:
Then fell she on her back, fair queen, and toward;
He rose and ran away; ah fool too froward!

III.

If love make me forsworn, how shall I swear to love?
O never faith could hold, if not to beauty vow'd: 30
Though to myself forsworn, to thee I'll constant prove;
Those thoughts to me like oaks, to thee like osiers bow'd.
Study his bias leaves, and makes his book thine eyes,
Where all those pleasures live, that art can comprehend.

If knowledge be the mark, to know thee shall suffice ; 35
 Well learned is that tongue that well can thee commend ;
 All ignorant that soul that sees thee without wonder ;
 Which is to me some praise, that I thy parts admire ;
 Thine eye Jove's lightning seems, thy voice his dreadful
 thunder,

Which (not to anger bent) is music and sweet fire. 40
 Celestial as thou art, O do not love that wrong,
 To sing the heavens' praise with such an earthly tongue.

IV.

Scarce had the sun dried up the dewy morn,
 And scarce the herd gone to the hedge for shade,
 When Cytherea, all in love forlorn, 45
 A longing tarriance for Adonis made,
 Under an osier growing by a brook,
 A brook, where Adon us'd to cool his spleen.
 Hot was the day ; she hotter that did look
 For his approach, that often there had been. 50
 Anon he comes and throws his mantle by,
 And stood stark naked on the brook's green brim ;
 The sun look'd on the world with glorious eye,
 Yet not so wistly, as this queen on him :
 He spying her, bounc'd in, whereat he stood ; 55
 " Oh Jove," quoth she, " why was not I a flood !"

V.

Fair is my love, but not so fair as fickle,
 Mild as a dove, but neither true nor trusty,
 Brighter than glass, and yet, as glass is, brittle,
 Softer than wax, and yet, as iron, rusty ; 60
 A little pale, with damask dye to grace her,
 None fairer, nor one falser to deface her.

Her lips to mine how often hath she join'd,
 Between each kiss her oaths of true love swearing !
 How many tales to please me hath she coin'd, 65
 Dreading my love, the loss whereof still fearing !
 Yet in the midst of all her pure protestings,
 Her faith, her oaths, her tears, and all were jestings.

She burnt with love, as straw with fire flameth,
 She burnt with love, as soon as straw out burneth; 70
 She fram'd the love, and yet she foil'd the framing,
 She bade love last, and yet she fell a turning.
 Was this a lover, or a lecher whether?
 Bad in the best, though excellent in neither.

VI.

If music and sweet poetry agree, 75
 As they must needs, the sister and the brother,
 Then must the love be great 'twixt thee and me,
 Because thou lov'st the one, and I the other.
 Downland to thee is dear, whose heavenly touch
 Upon the lute doth ravish human sense; 80
 Spenser to me, whose deep conceit is such,
 As passing all conceit, needs no defence.
 Thou lov'st to hear the sweet melodious sound,
 That Phœbus' lute, the queen of music, makes:
 And I in deep delight am chiefly drown'd, 85
 When as himself to singing he betakes.
 One god is god of both, as poets feign;
 One knight loves both, and both in thee remain.

VII.

Fair was the morn when the fair queen of love.

* * * * *

Paler for sorrow than her milk white dove, 90
 For Adon's sake, a youngster proud and wild;
 Her stand she takes upon a steep-up hill;
 Anon Adonis comes with horn and hounds;
 She silly queen, with more than love's good will,
 Forbade the boy he should not pass those grounds; 95
 "Once," quoth she, "did I see a fair sweet youth
 "Here in these brakes deep wounded with a boar,
 "Deep in the thigh, a spectacle of ruth!
 "See in my thigh," quoth she, "here was the fore:"
 She shewed her's; he saw more wounds than one, 100
 And blushing fled, and left her all alone.

VIII.

Sweet rose, fair flower, untimely pluck'd soon faded,
 Pluck'd in the bud, and faded in the spring!

R

Bright orient pearl, alack ! too timely shaded !
 Fair creature, kill'd too soon by death's sharp sting !
 Like a green plum that hangs upon a tree, 106
 And falls, through wind, before the fall should be.

I weep for thee, and yet no cause I have ;
 For why ? thou left'st me nothing in thy will.
 And yet thou left'st me more than I did crave ; 110
 For why ? I craved nothing of thee still :
 O yes, dear friend, I pardon crave of thee ;
 Thy discontent thou didst bequeath to me.

IX.

Fair Venus, with Adonis sitting by her,
 Under a myrtle shade, began to woo him : 115
 She told the youngling how god Mars did try her,
 And as he fell to her, she fell to him. [me ;"
 " E'en thus," quoth she, " the warlike god embrac'd
 And then she clipt Adonis in her arms : [me,"
 " E'en thus," quoth she, " the warlike god unlac'd
 As if the boy should use like loving charms. 121
 " E'en thus," quoth she, " he seized on my lips,"
 And with her lips on his did act the seizure ;
 And as she fetched breath, away he skips,
 And would not take her meaning nor her pleasure. 125
 Ah ! that I had my lady at this bay,
 To kiss and clip me till I run away !

X.

Crabbed age and youth,
 Cannot live together ;
 Youth is full of pleasure, 130
 Age is full of care :
 Youth like summer morn,
 Age like winter weather ;
 Youth like summer brave,
 Age like winter bare. 135
 Youth is full of sport,
 Age's breath is short,
 Youth is nimble, age is lame ;
 Youth is hot and bold,
 Age is weak and cold ; 140

Youth is wild, and age is tame.

Age, I do abhor thee;

Youth I do adore thee;

O, my love, my love is young:

Age I do defy thee;

145

O sweet shepherd, hie thee,

For methinks thou stay'st too long.

XI.

Beauty is but a vain and doubtful good,

A shining gloss that fadeth suddenly;

A flower that dies, when first it 'gins to bud;

150

A brittle glass, that's broken presently:

A doubtful good, a gloss, a glass, a flower,

Lost, faded, broken, dead within an hour.

And as good lost are sold or never found,

As faded gloss no rubbing will refresh,

155

As flowers dead lie wither'd on the ground,

As broken glass no cement can redress,

So beauty blemish'd once, for ever's lost,

In spite of physic, painting, pain, and cost.

XII.

Good night, good rest. Ah! neither be my share:

She bade good night, that kept my rest away;

161

And dast me to a cabin hang'd with care,

To descant on the doubts of my decay.

"Farewel," quoth she, "and come again to morrow;"

Farewel, I could not, for I supp'd with sorrow.

165

Yet at my parting sweetly she did smile,

In scorn or friendship, nill I construe whether:

May be, she joy'd to jest at my exile,

May be, again to make me wander thither:

Wander, a word for shadows like myself,

170

As take the pain, but cannot pluck the self.

XIII.

Lord how mine eyes threw gazes to the east!

My heart doth charge the watch; the morning rise

Doth cite each moving sense from idle rest.

Not daring trust the office of mine eyes,

175

While Philomela sits and sings, I sit and mark,
And wish her lays were tuned like the lark ;

For she doth welcome day-light with her ditty,
And drives away dark dismal dreaming night :
The night so pack'd, I post unto my pretty ; 180
Heart hath his hope, and eyes their wished sight ;
Sorrow chang'd to solace, solace mix'd with sorrow ;
For why ? she sigh'd and bade me come to-morrow.
Were I with her, the night would post too soon ;
But now are minutes added to the hours : 185
To spite me now each minute seems an hour ;
Yet not for me, shine sun to succour flowers !
Pack night, peep day ; good day, of night now borrow ;
Short night, to-night, and length thyself to-morrow.

XIV.

It was a lordling's daughter, the fairest one of three, 190
That lik'd of her master as well as well might be,
Till looking on an Englishman, the fairest that eye could
Her fancy fell a turning. [see,
Long was the combat doubtful, that love with love
did fight,

To leave the master loveless, or kill the gallant knight :
To put in practice either, alas it was a spite 196
Unto the silly damsel.

But one must be refused more mickle was the pain,
That nothing could be used, to turn them both to gain,
For of the two the trusty night was wounded with
disdain ; 200

Alas she could not help it !

Thus art with arms contending was victor of the day,
Which by a gift of learning did bear the maid away ;
Then lullaby, the learned man hath got the lady gay ;
For now my song is ended. 205

XV.

On a day (alack the day !)
Love whose month was ever May,
Spy'd a blossom passing fair,
Playing in the wanton air,

THE PASSIONATE PILGRIM.

197

Through the velvet leaves the wind,
 All unseen, 'gan passage find ;
 That the lover, sick to death,
 Wish'd himself to heaven's breath :
 " Air," quoth he, " thy cheeks may blow ;
 " Air, would I might triumph so !
 " But, alas ! my hand hath sworn
 " Ne'er to pluck thee from thy thorn :
 " Vow, alack, for youth unmeet,
 " Youth, so apt to pluck a sweet.
 " Do not call it sin in me,
 " That I am forsworn for thee ;
 " Thou for whom e'en Jove would swear
 " Juno but an Ethiope were ;
 " And deny himself for Jove,
 " Turning mortal for thy love.

210

215

220

225

XVI.

" My flocks feed not,
 " My ewes breed not,
 " My rams speed not,
 " All is amiss.
 " Love's denying,
 " Faith's defying,
 " Heart's denying,
 " Cauſer of this.
 " All my merry jigs are quite forgot,
 " All my lady's love is lost, God wot :
 " Where her faith was firmly fix'd in love,
 " There a nay is plac'd without remove.
 " One silly cross
 " Brought all my loss ;
 " O frowning fortune, curſed fickle dame !
 " For now I ſee,
 " Inconſtancy
 " More in women than in men remain.

230

235

240

" In black mourn I,
 " All fears ſcorn I,
 " Love hath forlorn me,

245

- " Living in thrall :
 " Heart is bleeding,
 " All help needing,
 " (O cruel speeding!) 250
 " Fraughted with gall.
 " My shepherds pipe can sound no deal,
 " My wethers' bell rings doleful knell ;
 " My curtail dog, that wont to have play'd,
 " Plays not at all, but seems afraid ; 255
 " With sighs so deep,
 " Procures to weep,
 " In howling wise, to see my doleful plight.
 " How sighs rebound
 " Through heartless ground, 260
 " Like a thousand vanquish'd men in bloody fight !
 " Clear wells spring not,
 " Sweet birds sing not,
 " Green plants bring not
 " Forth ; they die : 265
 " Herds stand weeping,
 " Flocks all sleeping,
 " Nymphs back peeping
 " Fearfully.
 " All our pleasure known to us poor swains, 270
 " All our merry meetings on the plains,
 " All our evening sport from us is fled,
 " All our love is lost, for love is dead.
 " Farewel, sweet love,
 " Thy like ne'er was 275
 " For sweet content, the cause of all my moan :
 " Poor Coridon
 " Must live alone,
 " Other help for him I see that there is none.

XVII.

- " When as thine eye has close the dame, 280
 " And stall'd the deer that thou should'st strike,
 " Let reason rule things worthy blame,
 " As well as fancy, partial might :
 " Take counsel of some wiser head,
 " Neither too young, nor yet unwed. 285

And when thou com'st thy tale to tell,
Smooth not thy tongue with filed talk,
Lest she some subtle practice sinell ;
(A cripple soon can find a halt :)
But plainly say thou lov'st her well,
And set her person forth to sale. 290

What though her frowning brows be bent,
Her cloudy looks will calm e'er night ;
And then too late she will repent,
That thus dissembled her delight ; 295
And twice desire, ere it be day,
That which with scorn she put away.

What though she strive to try her strength,
And ban and brawl, and say thee nay,
Her feeble force will yield at length, 300
When craft hath taught her thus to say ;
Had women been so strong as men,
In faith you had not had it then.'

And to her will frame all thy ways ;
Spare not to spend—and chiefly there 305
Where thy desert may merit praise,
By ringing in thy lady's ear :
The strongest castle, tower, and town,
The golden bullet beats it down.

Serve always with assured trust, 310
And in thy suit be humble, true ;
Unless thy lady prove unjust,
Press thou never to choose anew :
When time shall serve, be thou not slack
To proffer though she put thee back. 315

The wiles and guiles that women work,
Dissembled with an outward show,
The tricks and toys that in them lurk,
The cock that treads them shall not know.

Have you not heard it said full oft,
A woman's nay doth stand for nought? 320

Think women still to strive with men,
To sin, and never for to faint :
There is no heaven, by holy then,
When time with age shall them attain. 325
Were kisses all the joys in bed,
One woman would another wed.

But soft ; enough—too much I fear,
Left that my mistress hear my song ;
She'll not stick to round me i' th' ear, 330
To teach my tongue to be so long :
Yet will she blush, here be it said,
To hear her secrets so bewrayed.

XVIII.

As it fell upon a day,
In the merry month of May, 335
Sitting in a pleasant shade
Which a grove of myrtles made,
Beasts did leap, and birds did sing,
Trees did grow, and plants did spring :
Every thing did banish moan, 340
Save the nightingale alone :
She, poor bird, as all forlorn,
Lean'd her breast up-till a thorn,
And there sung the dolefull'ft ditty,
That to hear it was great pity : 345
Fie, fie, fie, now would she cry,
Teru, Teru, by and by :

That to hear her so complain,
Scarce I could from tears refrain ;
For her griefs, so lively shewn, 350
Made me think upon mine own.
Ah ! (thought I) thou mourn'st in vain ;
None take pity on thy pain :
Senseless trees, they cannot hear thee ;
Ruthless beasts, they will not cheer thee ; 355

King Pandion, he is dead ;
All thy friends are lapp'd in lead :
All thy fellow birds do sing,
Careless of thy sorrowing.
Even so, poor bird, like thee, 360
None alive will pity me.

Whilst as fickle fortune smil'd,
Thou and I were both beguil'd,
Every one that flatters thee,
Is no friend in misery. 365
Words are easy like the wind ;
Faithful friends are hard to find.
Every man will be thy friend,
Whilst thou hast wherewith to spend ;
But if store of crowns be scant, 370
No man will supply thy want,
If that one be prodigal,
Bountiful they will him call ;
And with such like flattering,
" *Pity but he were a king.*" 375

If he be addict to vice,
Quickly him they will entice ;
If to women he be bent,
They have him at commandment ;
But if fortune once do frown, 380
Then farewell his great renown :
They that fawn'd on him before,
Use his company no more.
He that is thy friend indeed, 385
He will help thee in thy need ;
If thou sorrow, he will weep ;
If thou wake, he cannot sleep :
Thus of every grief in heart
He with thee doth bear thee part.
These are certain signs to know 390
Faithful friend from flattering foe.

XIX.

Take, oh, take those lips away,
That so sweetly were forsworn;
And those eyes, the break of day,
Lights that do mislead the morn; 395
But by my kisses bring again,
Seals of love, but seal'd in vain.
Hide, oh, hide, those hills of snow
Which thy frozen bosom bears,
On whose tops the pinks that grow, 400
Are of those that April wears.
But first set my poor heart free,
Bound in those icy chains by thee.

XX.

Let the bird of loudest lay,
On the sole Arabian tree, 405
Herald sad and trumpet be,
To whose sound chaste wings obey.

But thou shrinking harbinger,
Foul pre-currer of the fiend,
Augur of the fever's end, 410
To this troop come thou not near.

From this session interdict
Every fowl of tyrant wing,
Save the eagle, feathered king
Keep the obsequy so strict. 415

Let the priest in surplice white,
That defunctive music can,
Be the death divining swan,
Lest the *requiem* lack his right.

And thou, treble-dated crow, 420
That thy fable gender mak'st
With the breath thou giv'st and tak'st,
'Mongst our mourners shalt thou go.

Here the anthem doth commence .—

Love and constancy is dead ;

425

Phoenix and the turtle fled

In a mutual flame from hence.

So they lov'd, as love in twain

Had the essence but in one ;

Two distincts, division none ;

430

Number there in love was slain.

Hearts remove, yet not asunder ;

Distance, and no space was seen

'Twixt the turtle and his queen ;

But in them it were a wonder.

435

So between them love did shine,

That the turtle saw his right

Flaming in the phoenix' fight :

Either was the other's mine.

Property was thus appall'd,

That the self was not the same ;

Single nature's double name

Neither two nor one was call'd.

Reason, in itself confounded,

Saw division grow together ;

445

To themselves yet either neither,

Simple were so well compounded,

That it cried, how true a twain,

Seemeth this concordant one !

Love hath reason, reason none,

450

If what parts can so remain.

Whereupon it made this threne

To the phoenix and the dove,

Co-supremes and stars of love,

As chorus to their tragic scene.

455

THRENOS.

Beauty, truth, and rarity,
Grace in all simplicity,
Here inclos'd in cinders lie.

Death is now the phœnix' nest ;
And the turtle's loyal breast
To eternity doth rest,

469

Leaving no posterity :
'Twas not their infirmity,
It was married chastity.

Truth may seem, but cannot be ;
Beauty brag, but 'tis not she ;
Truth and beauty buried be.

465

To this urn let those repair
That are either true or fair ;
For these dead birds sigh a prayer.

470



A LOVER'S COMPLAINT.

FROM off a hill whose concave womb re-worded
 A plaintful story from a sistering vale,
 My spirits to attend this double voice accorded,
 And down I lay to list the sad-tun'd tale :
 Ere long espy'd a fickle maid full pale, 5
 Tearing of papers, breaking rings a-twain,
 Storming her world with sorrow's wind and rain.

Upon her head a platted hive of straw,
 Which fortify'd her visage from the sun,
 Whereon the thought might think sometime it saw 10
 The carcase of a beauty spent and done.
 Time had not scythed all that youth begun,
 Nor youth all quit ; but, spite of heaven's fell rage,
 Some beauty peep'd through lattice of fear'd age.

Oft did she heave her napkin to her eyne, 15
 Which on it had conceited characters,
 Laund'ring the silken figures in the brine
 That seasoned woe had pelleted in tears,
 And often reading what contents it bears ;
 As often shrieking undistinguish'd woe, 20
 In clamours of all size, both high and low.

Sometimes her level'd eyes their carriage ride,
 As they did battery to the spheres intend ;
 Sometimes diverted their poor balls are ty'd
 To the orb'd earth ; sometimes they do extend 25
 Their view right on ; anon their gazes lend
 To every place at once, and no where fix'd,
 The mind and sight distractedly commix'd.

Her hair, nor loose, nor ty'd in formal plait,
 Proclaim'd in her a careless hand of pride ; 30
 For some, untuck'd, descended her sheav'd hat,
 Hanging her pale and pined cheek beside ;
 Some in her threaden fillet still did bide,
 And, true to bondage, would not break from thence,
 Though slackly braided in loose negligence. 35

A thousand favours from a maund she drew
 Of amber, crystal, and of bedded jet,
 Which one by one she in a river threw,
 Upon whose weeping margent she was set,—
 Like usury, applying wet to wet, 40
 Or monarch's hands, that let not bounty fall
 Where want cries *some*, but where excess begs all.

Of folded schedules had she many a one,
 Which she perus'd, sigh'd, tore, and gave the flood ;
 Crack'd many a ring of posied gold and bone, 45
 Bidding them find their sepulchres in mud ;
 Found yet more letters sadly pen'd in blood,
 With sleided silk feat and affectedly
 Enswath'd, and seal'd to curious secrecy.

These often bath'd she in her fluxive eyes, 50
 And often kiss'd, and often 'gan to tear ;
 Cry'd, O false blood ! thou register of lies,
 What unapproved witness dost thou bear !
 Ink would have seem'd more black and damned here !
 This said, in top of rage the lines she rents ; 55
 Big discontent so breaking their contents.

A reverend man that graz'd his cattle nigh,
 (Sometime a blusterer, that the ruffle knew
 Of court, of city, and had let go by
 The swiftest hours) observed as they flew ; 60
 Towards this afflicted fancy fastly drew ;
 And privileg'd by age, desires to know
 In brief the grounds and motives of her woe.

So slides he down upon his grained bat,
 And comely-distant sits he by her side ; 65
 When he again desires her, being sat,
 Her grievance with his hearing to divide :
 If that from him there may be aught apply'd
 Which may her suffering ecstasy assuage,
 'Tis promis'd in the charity of age. 70

Father, she says, though in me you behold
 The injury of many a blasting hour,

SHAKESPEARS

POEMS.





Let it not tell your judgment I am old :
 Not age, but sorrow, over me hath power :
 I might as yet have been a spreading flower,
 Fresh to myself, if I had self-apply'd 75
 Love to myself, and to no love beside.

But woe is me ! too early I attended
 A youthful suit (it was to gain my grace)
 Of one by nature's outwards so commended. 80
 That maidens' eyes stuck over all his face ;
 Love lack'd a dwelling, and made him her place ;
 And when in his fair parts she did abide,
 She was new lodg'd and newly deified,

His browny locks did hang in crooked curls ; 85
 And every light occasion of the wind
 Upon his lips-their silken parcels hurls.
 What's sweet to do, to do will aptly find :
 Each eye that saw him did enchant the mind ;
 For on his visage was in little drawn, 90
 What largeness thinks in Paradise was sawn.

Small shew of man was yet upon his chin ;
 His phoenix down began but to appear,
 Like unshorn velvet, on that termless skin,
 Whose bare out-brag'd the web it seem'd to wear ; 95
 Yet shew'd his visage by that cost most dear ;
 And nice affections wavering stood in doubt,
 If best 'twere as it was, or best without.

His qualities wore beauteous as his form,
 For maiden-tongu'd he was, and therefore free ; 100
 Yet, if men mov'd him, was he such a storm
 As oft 'twixt May and April is to see,
 When winds breathe sweet, unruly though they be.
 His rudeness so with his authoriz'd youth,
 Did livery falseness in a pride of truth. 105

Well could he ride ; and often men would say,
 " *That horse his mettle from his rider takes :*
Proud of subjection, noble by the sway, [makes !"
What rounds, what bounds, what course, what stop he

And controversy hence a question takes, 110
Whether the horse by him became his deed,
Or he his manage by the well-doing steed.

But quickly on this side the verdict went;
His real habitude gave life and grace
To appertainings and to ornament, 115
Accomplish'd in himself, not in his case:
All aids, themselves made fairer by their place,
Came for additions; yet their purpos'd trim
Piec'd not his grace, but were all grac'd by him.

So on the tip of his subduing tongue 120
All kind of arguments and question deep,
All replication prompt, and reason strong,
For his advantage still did wake and sleep:
To make the weeper laugh, the laugher-weep,
He had the dialect and different skill, 125
Catching all passions in his craft of will;

That he did in the general bosom reign
Of young, of old; and sexes both enchanted,
To dwell with him in thoughts, or to remain
In personal duty, following where he haunted: 130
Consents bewitch'd, ere he desire, have granted;
And dialogu'd for him what he would say,
Ask'd their own wills, and made their wills obey.

Many there were that did his picture get,
To serve their eyes, and in it put their mind; 135
Like fools that in the imagination set
The goodly objects which abroad they find
Of lands and mansions, their's in thought assign'd;
And labouring in more pleasures to bestow them,
Than the true gouty landlord which doth owe them.

So many have, that never touch'd his hand, 141
Sweetly suppos'd them mistress of his heart.
My woeful self, that did in freedom stand,
And was my own free simple, (not in part),
What with his art in youth, and youth in art, 145

A LOVER'S COMPLAINT.

209

Threw my affections in his charmed power,
Reserv'd the stalk, and gave him all my flower.

Yet did I not, as some my equals did,
Demand of him, nor being desired, yielded;
Finding myself in honour so forbid, 150
With safest distance I mine honour shielded:
Experience for me many bulwarks builded
Of proofs new-bleeding, which remain'd the foil
Of this false jewel, and his amorous spoil.

But ah! who ever shunn'd by precedent 155
The destin'd ill she must herself assay?
Or forc'd examples, 'gainst her own content,
To put the by-pass'd perils in her way?
Counsel may stop a while what will not stay;
For when we rage, advice is often seen 160
By blunting us to make our wits more keen.

Nor gives it satisfaction to our blood,
That we must curb it upon others' proof,
To be forbid the sweets that seem so good,
For fear of harms that preach in our behoof. 165
O appetite, from judgment stand aloof!
The one a palate hath that needs will taste,
Though reason weep, and cry *it is thy last*.

For further I could say, *this man's untrue*,
And knew the patterns of his soul beguiling; 170
Heard where his plants in other's orchards grew,
Saw how deceits were gilded in his smiling,
Knew vows were ever brokers to defiling,
Thought, characters, and words, merely but art,
And bastards of his foul adulterate heart. 175

And long upon these terms I held my city,
Till thus he 'gan besiege me: "Gentle maid,
"Have of my suffering youth some feeling pity,
"And be not of my holy vows afraid;
"That's to you sworn, to none was ever said; 180
"For feasts of love I have been call'd unto,
"Till now didne'er invite, nor never vow.

- " All my offences that abroad you see,
" Are errors of the blood, none of the mind:
" Love made them not; with acture they may be,
" Where neither party is nor true nor kind: 186
" They fought their shame that so their shame did
 " find;
" And so much less of shame in me remains,
" By how much of me their reproach contains.
- " Among the many that mine eyes have seen, 190
" Not one whose flame my heart so much as warm'd,
" Or my affection put to the smallest teen,
" Or any of my leisures ever charm'd:
" Harm have I done to them, but ne'er was harm'd;
" Kept hearts in liveries, but mine own was free; 195
" And reign'd, commanding in his monarchy.
- " Look here what tributes wounded fancies sent me,
" Of paled pearls, and rubies red as blood;
" Figuring that they their passions likewise lent me
" Of grief and blushes, aptly understood 200
" In bloodless white and the encrimson'd mood;
" Effects of terror and dear modesty,
" Encamp'd in hearts, but fighting outwardly.
- " And lo! behold these talents of their hair,
" With twisted metal amourosly impleach'd, 205
" I have receiv'd from many a several fair,
" (Their kind acceptance weepingly beseech'd)
" With the annexions of fair gems enrich'd,
" And deep-brain'd sonnets that did amplify
" Each stone's dear nature, worth, and quality. 210
- " The diamond; why 'twas beautiful and hard,
" Whereto his invis'd properties did tend;
" The deep-green emerald, in whose fresh regard,
" Weak sights their sickly radiance do amend;
" The heaven-hued sapphire and the opal blend 215
" With objects manifold; each several stone,
" With wit well blazon'd, smil'd, or made some moan.

- " Lo! all these trophies of affections hot,
 " Of pensiv'd and subdu'd desires the tender,
 " Nature hath charg'd me that I hoard them not, 220
 " But yield them up where I myself must render,
 " That is, to you, my origin and ender;
 " For these, of force, must your oblations be,
 " Since I their altar, you enpatron me.
 " O then advance of yours that phraseless hand, 225
 " Whose white weighs down the airy scale of praise;
 " Take all these similes to your own command,
 " Hallow'd with sighs that burning lungs did raise;
 " What me your minister, for you obeys,
 " Works under you; and to your audit comes 230
 " Their distract parcels in combined fums.
 " Lo! this device was sent me from a nun,
 " Or sister sanctified of holiest note,
 " Which late her noble suit in court did shun,
 " Whose rarest havings made the blessings dote; 235
 " For she was sought by spirits of richest coat,
 " But kept cold distance, and did thence remove,
 " To spend her living in eternal love.
 " But O, my sweet, what labour is't to leave
 " The thing we have not, mastering what no
 " strives? 240
 " Playing the place which did no form receive,
 " Playing patient sports in unconstrained gyves:
 " She that her fame so to herself contrives,
 " The scars of battle scapeth by the flight, 244
 " And makes her absence valiant, not her might.
 " O pardon me, in that my boast is true;
 " The accident which brought me to her eye,
 " Upon the moment did her force subdue,
 " And now she would the caged cloister fly:
 " Religious love put out religion's eye: 250
 " Not to be tempted, would she be enmur'd,
 " And now, to tempt all, liberty procur'd.

- "How mighty then you are, O hear me tell!
 "The broken bosoms that to me belong,
 "Have emptied all their fountains in my well, 255
 "And mine I pour your ocean all among:
 "I strong o'er them, and you o'er me being strong,
 "Must for your victory us all congett,
 "As compound love to phyfic your cold breast.
 "My parts had power to charm a sacred sun, 260
 "Who disciplin'd and dieted in grace,
 "Believ'd her eyes when I the assail begun,
 "All vows and consecrations giving place.
 "O most potential love! vow, bond, nor space,
 "In thee hath neither sting, knot, nor confine, 265
 "For thou art all, and all things else are thine.
 "When thou impress'st, what are precepts worth
 "Of stale example? When thou wilt inflame,
 "How coldly those impediments stand forth
 "Of wealth, of filial fear, law, kindred fame? 270
 "Love's arms are peace, 'gainst rule, 'gainst sense,
 " 'gainst shame.
 "And sweetens, in the suffering pangs it bears,
 "The aloes of all forces, shocks, and fears.
 "Now all these hearts that do on mine depend,
 "Feeling it break, with bleeding groans they pine,
 "And supplicant their sighs to you extend, 276
 "To leave the battery that you make 'gainst mine,
 "Lending soft audience to my sweet design,
 "And credent soul to that strong-bonded oath,
 "That shall prefer and undertake my troth." 280

This said, his watery eyes he did dismount,
 Whose sights till then were levell'd on my face;
 Each cheek a river running from a fount
 With brinish current downward flow'd apace:
 O how the channel to the stream gave grace 285
 Who, glaz'd with chrystal, gate the glowing roses
 That flame through water which their hue incloses.

A LOVER'S COMPLAINT.

213

O father, what a hell of witchcraft lies
In the small orb of one particular tear?
But with the inundation of the eyes 290
What rocky heart to water will not wear?
What breast so cold that is not warmed here?
O cleft effect! cold modesty, hot wrath,
Both fire from hence and chill extinture hath!

For lo! his passion, but an art of craft, 290
Even there resolv'd my reason into tears;
There my white stole of chastity I daft,
Shook off my sober guards and civil fears,
Appear to him, as he to me appears, 299
All melting; though our drops this difference bore,
His poison'd me, and mine did him restore.

In him a plenitude of subtle matter,
Applied to cautels, all strange forms receives,
Of burning blushes, or of weeping water,
Or swooning paleness; and he takes and leaves, 300
In either's aptness as it best deceives,
To blush at speeches rank, to weep at woes,
Or to turn white, and swoon at tragic shews.

That not a heart which in his level came,
Could 'scape the hail of his all-hurting aim, 305
Shewing fair nature is both wild and tame;
And veil'd in them did win whom he would maim,
Against the thing he sought, he would exclaim
When he most burnt in heart-wish'd luxury,
He preach'd pure maid, and prais'd cold chastity. 310

Thus merely with the garment of a grace,
The naked and concealed fiend he cover'd,
That the unexperienced gave the temper place,
Which like a cherubim above them hover'd:
Who young and simple would not be so lover'd? 315
Ah me! I fell, and yet do question make,
What I should do again for such a fake.

Oh! that infected moisture of his eye!
Oh! that false fire, which in his cheek so glow'd!

Oh! that forc'd thunder, from his heart did fly! 320

Oh! that sad breath, his spungy lungs bestow'd!

Oh! all that borrow'd motion seeming owed!

Would yet again betray the fore-betray'd,

And new pervert a reconciled maid.

324



CONTENTS.

	Page
Life of the Author	5
Extracts from Mr. Pope's Preface,	16
Extracts from Dr. Johnson's Preface,	21

RECOMMENDATORY POEMS.

Ode on the Genius of Shakspeare,	37
The Tomb of Shakspeare, a Vision,	41
Dedication to Venus and Adonis,	46
Venus and Adonis,	47
Dedication to the Rape of Lucrece,	81
The Rape of Lucrece,	82
Sonnets,	133
The Passionate Pilgrim,	191
A Lover's Complaint,	205





